

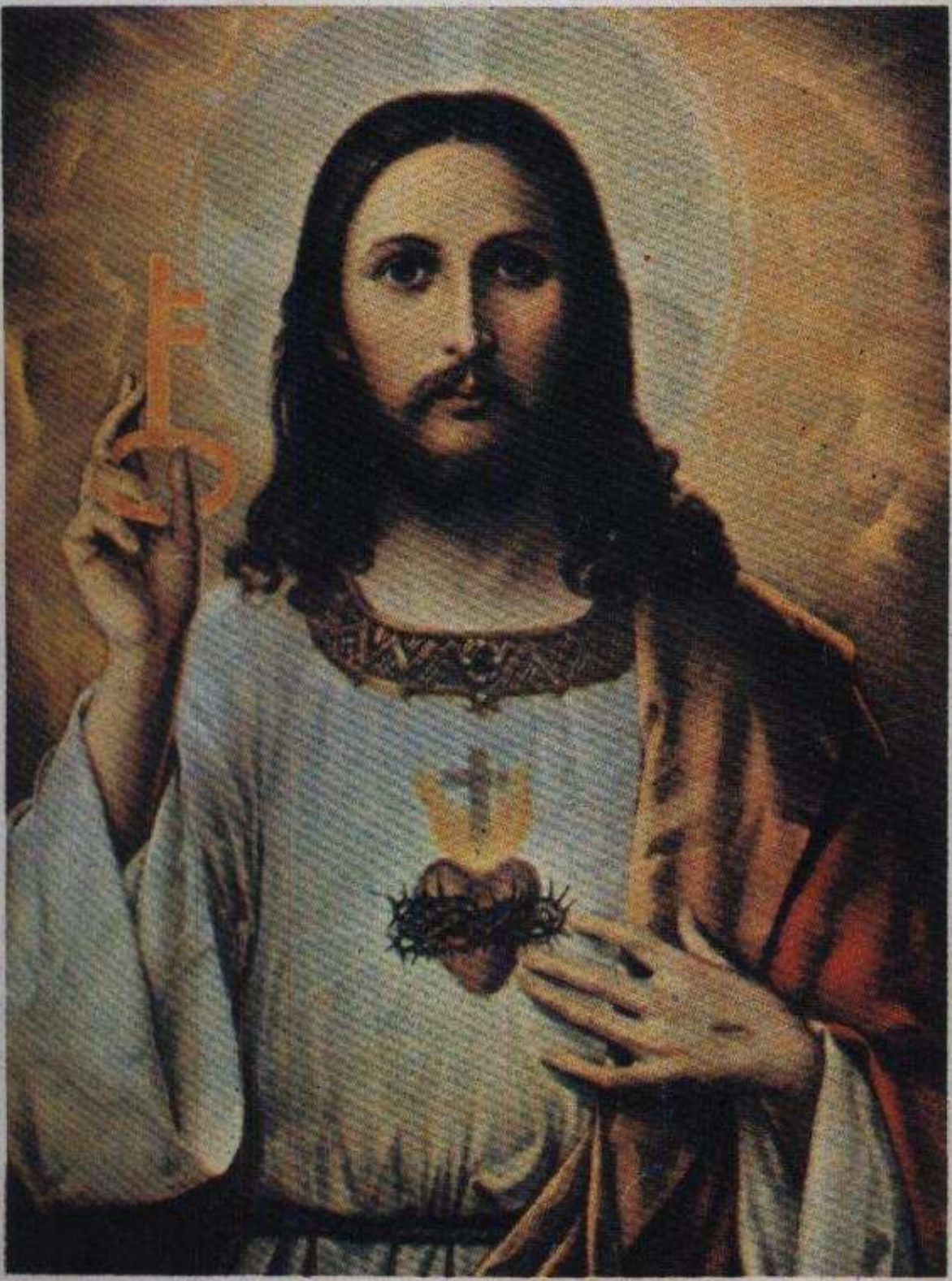


THIS IS ETERNAL LIFE

Myung Ho Park

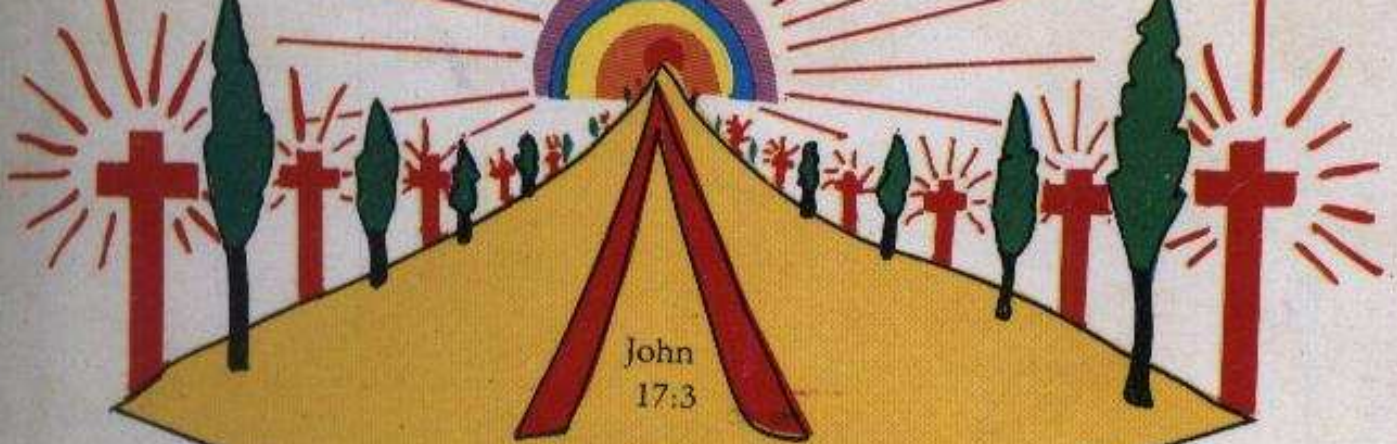
THIS IS  
ETERNAL LIFE





“I will give you the keys of the kingdom of heaven.” (Matt. 16:19)





John  
17:3

This is life eternal,

"The earth shall be full of  
the knowledge of the Lord, as  
the waters cover the  
sea." (Isa. 11:9, K.J.V.)

"The path of the just is  
as the shining light, that  
shineth more and more unto  
the perfect day."  
(Pro. 4:18, K.J.V.)

*That they might know  
Thee  
the only true God*

*Sages of all ages*

*All churches of the earth*

*18 20 35.*

whom Thou hast sent

*and Jesus Christ*

*All seekers of truth*

*All Bible-learners*

*Wanderers in  
despair and distress*

*Pursuers of  
true life*



**“This is life eternal, that they might know Thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom Thou hast sent.”**

**— John 17:3 — (K.J.V.)**

**“The knowledge of God and of Jesus Christ expressed in character is an exaltation above everything else that is esteemed on earth or in heaven. It is the very highest education. It is the key that opens the portals of the heavenly city. This knowledge it is God’s purpose that all who put on Christ shall possess.”**

**— M.H. p.457 —**

*(All the texts of this book are from Revised Standard Version of the Bible unless otherwise indicated.)*



**Dear everyone of human family!**



Praise the Lord! Bringing glory to God first, I present this book to everyone of human family.

Most of the readers of this book will find at first the only highway of eternal life that leads from earth to heaven. At the same time you will be led to grasp the keys of the gates of heaven, the keys of the jewely gates. And then, you will also obtain the fruit of life—eternal life—which we thought have forfeited forever when driven out from Eden after the transgression. I hope you shall lose it never again, but, holding it fast, make it your daily bread. As our physical life is sustained by food, so our spiritual life is sustained by the word of God. It is the law of heaven that we can live eternally through receiving the word of God everyday as we must eat for ourselves in order to receive nourishment. "The Lord God... put him into the garden to dress and keep the tree of life. And the Lord God commanded, 'Thou mayest freely eat'" (the fruit of the tree of life) (Gen. 2:15,16.K.J.V.). I believe these are special merciful and loving gifts of God who "so loved the world" that He decided to give the fruit of life and keys of the kingdom of heaven to His children living in these last perilous days who are plunged into hopeless despair without any prospect for eternal life. It was totally out of my expectation to publish this book worldwide, but constrained by the inexpressible love of the Father who has given His only begotten Son for



sinner, by the matchless love of the Saviour our Eldest Brother, and by the appeal of the Spirit, I decided to obey Them, despite my imperfections. My desire to bring this good tidings quickly to my brethren and sisters who are desperately wandering about to look for the fruit of eternal life made me write down this book as dictated by the Father. I believe this is quite an appropriate confession of mine. But because I am an unlearned and uneducated man you will find a lot of awkwardness on every page. I made effort to conceal the shortcomings and imperfections, but still your tolerance is desired. Hoping for your tolerance and understanding I sincerely appeal to you to grasp the word of God, the fruit of life, and the keys of the gates of heaven so that you and your family and your country may enjoy the blessing of immortality. Finally, closing my word to everyone of human family, I render glory and praise and thanksgiving to our true God who have given us everlasting life when we had been wandering and striving for it in these last ages.

May everyone be filled with the blessing of the infinite love of the Father, of the Son, and of the Spirit.

Jan. 1, 1981  
 Myung Ho Park, the Writer.

— Contents —

Jesus Christ, the True Witness ..... 1  
 The Highway of Eternal Life that Leads  
 from Earth to Heaven ..... 3  
 A Letter to Everyone of Human Family ..... 5

**Chapter I. This Is Life Eternal** ..... 11

1. The Keys of the Kingdom of Heaven ..... 13  
 2. Signs and Wonders Cannot  
 Give Eternal Life ..... 17  
 3. Eternal Life is Gained by True  
 Knowledge ..... 22  
 4. The Precious Gift of Eternal Life  
 that God Gives Solely to His Friends ..... 25

**Chapter II. The Only True God  
 (The Holy Father)** ..... 33

1. The Outward Appearance and Inward  
 Heart of the True God ..... 34  
 2. The Love of the Father Thicker  
 Than the Blood of the Cross and Stronger  
 Than the Death of the Cross ..... 47  
 3. Our Real Father Who Has Truly  
 Begotten Us ..... 56  
 4. Our Real Father Who Made Us a  
 Sweet Home As a Branch  
 Family of Heaven ..... 64  
 5. Our Real Father Who Has Chosen  
 Us and Given Us to Jesus His Eldest Son .. 72



6. Our Real Father Who Answers Directly to All Our Prayers .....	82
7. Our Real Father Who Has Forgiven Us of Our Iniquity and Transgression and Sin .....	89
8. Our Real Father Who Personally Heals All Our Diseases .....	102
9. Our Real Father Who is Working Diligently for Each of His Children .....	108
10. Our Real Father Who Gives His Holy Spirit to Us Sinners .....	114
11. Our Real Father Who Has Bestowed Another Fruit of Life upon Us His Fallen Children .....	122
12. Our Real Father Who Sanctifies Us and Makes Us Bear Fruit .....	142
13. Our Real Father Who Has Given Up His Only Begotten Son to Save Us .....	150
14. Our Real Father Who Was Tormented with His Son on the Cross to Save Us .....	156
15. Our Real Father Who Abides in Us Personally .....	163
16. Our Real Father Who Resurrects Us and Gives Us Eternal Life .....	168
17. Our Real Father Who Weeps in the Judgment Seat .....	171
18. Our Real Father Who Disciplines Us .....	190
19. Our Real Father Who Has Given Us His Throne .....	194
20. Our Real Father Who Has Given Us His Royal Authority .....	197

21. Our Real Father Who Has Given Us His Kingdom .....	200
22. Our Real Father Who Has Given Us an Everlasting Sign .....	202
23. Our Real Father Who Will Live with Us in a Mansion Forever .....	215
24. With What Shall I Come Before My Lofty Father? .....	221
* Things to Memorize for Complete Regeneration .....	227

### Chapter III. Jesus Christ (The Holy Son) .....

1. Christ's Outward Appearance and Inward Heart .....	234
2. Jesus Christ, the True God Who Came in Human Form .....	243
3. Jesus Christ, the Creator God of the Universe .....	249
4. Jesus Christ, the Only Saviour of Man .....	255
5. Jesus Christ, a Friend of Sinners .....	261
6. Jesus Christ, a Servant of Man .....	268
7. Jesus Christ, a Man of Sorrow .....	273
8. Wealth and Poverty of Jesus on Earth .....	285
9. Jesus the Nazarite, a Faithful Servant of God .....	293
10. Jesus Christ, a Man of Prayer .....	299
11. Jesus Christ Who Destroyed the Prison-gate of Death .....	307
12. Jesus Christ, the Good Shepherd .....	313
13. Jesus Christ, the God Who Answers by Fire .....	322

14. Jesus Christ, a Stone Cut Out by No Human Hand .....	330
15. Jesus Christ, the Precious Spiritual Rock .....	338
16. Jesus Christ, Our Righteousness .....	360
17. Jesus Christ, Our High Priest .....	372
18. Jesus Christ Who is Equal with God the Father .....	378
19. Jesus Christ, Lord of the Sabbath .....	387
20. Jesus Christ Who is Coming Again .....	403
21. Jesus Christ Who Will Live with Us in a Mansion Forever .....	410
22. With What Shall I come Before Jesus My God and Saviour? .....	419
* Things to Memorize for Complete Regeneration .....	427

**Chapter IV. Miraculous Regeneration and the Happiness of Sanctified Life** .....

1. Regeneration and Sanctification .....	431
2. Regeneration is Accomplished in a Moment .....	434
3. The State of a Man Regenerated .....	440
4. The Regenerate may Fall Again .....	442
5. Sanctification is a Lifework .....	446
6. A Formula for Achieving Miraculous Regeneration .....	449
7. The Happiness of Those Who Walk in the Path of Sanctification .....	452
* Closing Word .....	456

**Chapter I. This Is Life Eternal**

“I will give you the keys of the kingdom of heaven”  
(Matt. 16:19).

“What must I do to inherit eternal life?” (Mark 10:17). “What must I do to enter heaven where there is no death?” has been an unceasing exclamation of every member of human family throughout all ages who has been “subject to lifelong bondage through fear of death” (Heb. 2:15). In reality, it is an even more pressing question to us in these last days. Then, how many, among all of human family in all ages, have found the definite answer to this question and obtained it? Through the Bible we are plainly assured of the heartaching fact that, in contrast with the exclamation of thousands of millions in all ages, deplorably few have found the answer and all the rest have died without hope.



To give clear answer to the question of everyone of human family... "What must I do to inherit eternal life?" (Mark 10:17) -- is the unique purpose and mission of this book.

When we had been subject to the power of death without hope since our fall by the transgression that we had brought upon ourselves, our infinite, compassionate Father "loved the world (sinners) so much, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish but have everlasting life" (John 3:16, K.J.V.). We well know that it was to give eternal life to us sinners that God made His Son "to be sin who knew no sin" (2 Cor. 5:21). Then, "what is the eternal life and on what condition is it gained?" become the most important questions.

## 1. The Keys of the Kingdom of Heaven

(Matt. 16:19)

In the Bible there are plainly revealed two ways and methods for eternal life: the first one is in John 3:16 as mentioned previously, that "God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him (Jesus) should not perish, but have everlasting life." Jesus also made clear the first way and method, saying, "You search the scriptures, because you think that in them you have eternal life; and it is they that bear witness to Me" (John 5:39). "This is the will of My Father, that everyone who sees the Son and believes in Him should have eternal life" (John 6:40). This is the first way and method for eternal life.

The second way Jesus again teaches us, "Truly, truly, I say to you, he who hears My word, and believes Him who sent Me, has eternal life; he... has passed from death to life" (John 5:24). Now we see clearly that there are only two ways and methods for eternal life; and they are simple and easy. These two formulae are combined together in one place—in the prayer of Jesus to His Father: "He lifted up His eyes to heaven and said, Father... this is life eternal, that they might know Thee the only true God (the Father), and Jesus Christ (the Son), whom Thou hast sent" (John 17:1,3, K.J.V.). Therefore now, when a man is filled with a profound knowledge of the holy Father and of the holy



Son, he has already entered eternal life and become a real son of God, over whom the power of death cannot have dominion. In 66 books of the Bible from Genesis to Revelation, there are found innumerable broad and narrow ways of truth, innumerable ways of light, and ways of messages. But all these ways of various lights merge in one place, which is the only highway in heaven and earth, straight and broad from earth to heaven—the way of the knowledge “of the only true God and of Jesus Christ whom He has sent.” When men keep following the narrow ways of little lights shining from respective books of the Bible, they at last arrive at the broad highway of John 17:3. From then on, all hidden mysteries that could not be understood by the little dim lights that have been leading them will be clearly understood, and on the new highway they will find themselves as if they were riding in an express bus or flying in the airplane, and will also find that their travelling toward heaven thus far have been like riding in a slow-moving wagon on a gravel road. And they will realize that they have already received the key from God that unlocks all the mysteries of the Bible, all the mysteries of heaven and earth. The happiness! The gratitude! And the joy! Who will be able to measure them? This is the happiness that only those who have experienced it can possess. “The path of the just is as the shining light, that shineth more and more unto the perfect day” (Pro. 4:18). This is the key of heaven that Jesus meant when

He said, “I will give you the keys of the kingdom of heaven, and whatever you bind on earth shall be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven” (Matt. 16:19).

If John 3:16 is esteemed as the head verse of all the Bible, its ultimatum and completion is John 17:3. This verse, John 17:3, is the only golden highway, the highway of everlasting life that leads straight from earth to the very throne of God in heaven. This is also the one and only key that unlocks the jewelry gates of the kingdom of heaven. It is said by someone that we have in the Bible a key that unfolds the universe to mankind, and all the hidden mysteries in the Bible to human. Ellen Gould White also said, “The knowledge of God and of Jesus Christ expressed in character is an exaltation above everything else that is esteemed on earth or in heaven. It is the very highest education. It is the key that opens the portals of the heavenly city. This knowledge it is God’s purpose that all who put on Christ shall possess.” Yes. The knowledge of God is the foundation of all true education; and it is also the subject that we will ever learn in heaven throughout eternal ages. To impart the knowledge of God and Christ and to form characters in accordance with it should be the purpose of all gospel workers and teachers of religion.

“The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom, and the knowledge of the Holy One is insight” (Pro. 9:10). “I desire... not sacrifice,” but “the knowledge

of God, rather than burnt offerings" (Hosea 6:6). But "My people are foolish, they know Me not; they are stupid children, they have no understanding" (Jer. 4:22). "There is... no knowledge of God in the land" (Hosea 4:1). "My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge" (Hosea 4:6). Who do you think He meant by "My people?" He referred to all the people on earth: especially those who, in search of eternal life, pray in church every morning, every week, and worship God in family circles every morning and evening. You readers were probably aware of it already. I believe. But what an astonishing sigh we hear — "My people are destroyed!" What is this all about? What "knowledge" are we destitute of and destroyed without? I do believe that we all should realize that the sigh comes from the lack of the knowledge of "the only true God and Jesus Christ whom He has sent," the true knowledge that is our eternal life. Therefore I earnestly hope that you read through this book repeatedly with prayerful and thirsting spirit as a thirsty deer longs for flowing streams, so that you may not belong to those for whom God sighs, but to those children of eternal life, the sons and daughters of God who run on the heaven-bound highway with unspeakable joy and thanksgiving.

## 2. Signs and Wonders Cannot Give Eternal Life (Matt. 24:24)

"This is the will of our Father" (John 6:40) that we should have the practical knowledge of "the only true God and Jesus Christ whom He has sent" (John. 17:3). This is eternal life and also the will and purpose of our Father. But there is a large multitude of "vain men" (James 2:20) in the world who, apart from the true practical knowledge of eternal life revealed in the Bible, seek after signs and wonders with reckless faith. It is commonly seen that they are absorbed in impractical wonders, neglecting the words of the Bible of which knowledge gives true life everlasting.

Jesus said, "It is the Spirit that gives life... the words that I have spoken to you (the Bible) are spirit and life" (John 6:63). Neglecting the words of life that proceeded from the mouth of God, sad to say, multitudes of today are driven here and there to seek visible miracles and wonders, to earn nothing in their hands in spite of their desperate longing to grab for eternal life. A weary, exhausted wayfarer in the desert deluded by the mirage pursues one mirage after another in a vague hope, finally to collapse and die in a vast lonely desert. Similarly, there are countless number of Christians these days who end their religious life with the same miserable and pitiful pursuit. But people (fellow Christians) claim that this brother (or sister) fell asleep in the Lord in hope, making him a splendid bier of many



flowers and giving a magnificent funeral ceremony with resonant funeral march, and by so doing they comfort themselves. O what a deplorable fact it is!

I must say again that truly our salvation and eternal life is not obtained by wonders and miracles, most of which are wrought by Satan acting under the name of Christ: for there is nothing more effective and powerful means to deceive and take captive all those who are not standing firmly on the words of God.

Look at the agents of Satan who performed the same miracles as those that were wrought by Moses, the servant of God before the king of Egypt. Behold the great power of Satan who brought terrible disasters to righteous Job. Therefore I hope that you will not forget that Satan is so dreadful an enemy who can skillfully imitate those true miracles and powers that Jesus performed two thousand years ago. That is why Jesus has given warnings to us living in these last days, saying, "False christis and false prophets will arise and show great signs and wonders, so as to lead astray, if possible, even the elect" (Matt. 24:24). "Beloved, do not believe every spirit, but test the spirits to see whether they are of God: for many false prophets have gone out into the world" (1 John 4:1). He repeatedly warns us that men shall not obtain eternal life by wonders or miracles "but by every word (the Bible) that proceeds from the mouth of God" (Matt. 4:4).

I hope you remember that the true wonders and miracles of God are wrought only in times of their

pressing need as an indication for His loving protection and tender care for His children and that the miracle itself does not bring eternal life. Our only salvation and life everlasting lies in the true knowledge of "the only true God and Jesus Christ whom He has sent" (John 17:3), that is, to eat and drink "the word" of God in the Bible and live our lives in the Bible, in His Word that has been from the beginning, that contains the Spirit and life of God. Now, let us listen to the voice of our God. "To the law and to the testimony! If they do not speak according to this word, they have no light of dawn" (Isa. 8:20, N.I.V.). I believe you readers know well that "the light of dawn" mentioned here means the day on which Jesus, the Sun of Righteousness comes with His ten thousand times ten thousand and thousand of thousands of angels (Matt. 25:31) to bring back His people as He promised in John 14:1-3. In order that we may see the glorious day, if we thus far have had the blind religion that is based on wonders and miracles rather than living on every Word that proceeds from the mouth of God, let us shake it off and turn to new faith and new heart. And let us return to the Bible, to the Bible only which is filled with the treasures of truth, the grand truth of the universe. "This is life eternal, that they might know Thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom Thou hast sent" (John 17:3, K.J.V.).

I say again that "eternal life" can not be obtained by the power to heal diseases or to cast out the devil

or by exercising authority as a prophet. It is not the position or the authority of a pastor or an evangelist, a priest or the Pope. And "the eternal life" is not a strife or an envy or the authority of denominations or of any organizations. It is the sacred knowledge of the only true God and of Jesus Christ whom He has sent. This knowledge is the eternal life and salvation. In this grand truth lie the way, the life, the resurrection, the kingdom of heaven, and God Himself. Let us all return to the grand truth of the Bible in humility.

There are so called clergymen, who are possessed by the power of Satan, and perform false miracles and wonders. We should not only be on our strict guard against them but also have compassion for them since they are completely deceived into thinking that the miracles wrought through them is brought by the power of Jesus and of the Holy Spirit. But soon the true character of their deception will be made manifest on the day of Jesus' Second Coming. "On that day many will say to Me, Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in your name, and cast out demons in your name, and do many mighty works in your name?" (Matt. 7:22), "and why do you not turn your face upon us, or pay attention to us?" they will say. "And then will I declare to them, I never knew you," the power that flowed out from you so far was not of Me, nor of the Holy Spirit, but of the foul spirit, the evil spirit of Satan. "Therefore depart from Me, you evildoers" (Matt.

7:22, 23). On that day all the false colors shall be made manifest and they will see that all the miracles performed by them have been the deceptions and schemes of Satan. If you readers have been one of them, I entreat you with tears to make a resolution to shake off the enemy from you, and with courage and determination, come forward to "the only true God" our mighty Father and to "Jesus Christ", our tender Brother and open your heart to Them and talk to Them about your situation and ask which path in life you should take to become a true son of God and a true shepherd who leads the flocks of God to the way of eternal life. And I hope that when Jesus Christ, the King of kings comes, you will be heard the blessed declaration, "Well done, good and faithful servant; you have been faithful over a little, I will set you over much; enter into the joy of your Master." And "the King will say... 'Come... inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world'" (Matt. 25:23,24).

But to the unfaithful shepherds it will be spoken, "There you shall die, and there shall be your splendid chariots, you shame of your master's house. I will thrust you from your office" (Isa. 22:18,19). "Bind him hand and foot, and cast him into the outer darkness; there men will weep and gnash their teeth" (Matt. 22:13). Return, return from them immediately, oh, dear elders! "He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches" (Rev. 2:29).



### 3. Eternal Life Is Gained by True Knowledge

In China it is commonly said. "Unless a precious stone is cut with a chisel it cannot be made a vessel of value; and unless a man learns, he cannot attain to righteousness." Chungtzu, a sage of China also said. "Man who refuses to learn is like someone who attempts to soar up to the sky without proper skills." To attempt to enter heaven without the knowledge of "the only true God and Jesus Christ whom He has sent" is like attempting to rise up through the sky without any means. There is no difference in their foolishness by trying to do the impossibility. So God says. "It is not good to have zeal without knowledge" (Pro. 19:2, N.I.V.). It is indeed not good and impossible to have eternal life and come before God without the knowledge.

One may ask, "Why by knowledge and not by faith?" Of course, you are right to say so. We are saved by faith in Christ, not by knowledge alone. But looking into the origin of faith, we find that we cannot have faith unless we have knowledge first. "So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God" (Rom. 10:17, K.J.V.). Therefore whether we obtain eternal life or not depends upon whether we have the necessary knowledge for that or not. That is, our life everlasting depends upon the true knowledge of "the only true God and Jesus Christ whom He has sent" (John 17:3). So, to those children who do not give heed

to the knowledge, God says, "I have written to him the great things of My law, but they were counted as a strange thing" (Hosea 8:12, K.J.V.). Therefore, "Behold, the days are coming.... when I will send a famine on the land: not a famine of bread, nor a thirst for water, but hearing the words of the Lord (words of the true knowledge)" (Amos 8:11). "I have called and you refused to listen, have stretched out My hand and no one has heeded, and you have ignored all My counsel and would have none of My reproof. I also will laugh at your calamity; I will mock when panic strikes you, when panic strikes you like a storm, and your calamity comes like a whirlwind, when distress and anguish come upon you. Then they will call upon Me, but I will not answer: they will seek Me diligently but will not find Me because they hated knowledge.... and would have none of My counsel, and despised all My reproof" (Pro. 1:24-30).

"Because you have rejected knowledge, I reject you from being a priest to Me.... I also will forget your children" (Hosea 4:6). Therefore it is a matter of immediate necessity without a doubt that all religious workers and witnesses for God should spread the knowledge of "the only true God and Jesus Christ whom He has sent" (John 17:3), which is life everlasting to all. And in order to impart this knowledge to people, we ourselves should know God first as did our patriarchs.

Today God is calling for those who would go into the perishing world with the true knowledge of eternal life. "And I heard the voice of the Lord saying, 'Whom shall I send, and who will go for Us?'... (Isa. 6:8). "My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge" (Hosea 4:6). "I desire... not sacrifice," but "the knowledge of God, rather than burnt offerings" (Hosea 6:6).

#### 4. The Precious Gift of Eternal Life That God Gives Solely to His Friends

Jesus said that to know the only true God and Jesus Christ whom He had sent is eternal life and I think that a deeper meaning is implied in the words "to know." It is more than merely to know each other's face and name. For example, a man working in a large company caused a big fire by a momentary mistake. Many workers were killed and he was sentenced to death. This news reached his close and intimate friend's ears and he came to him immediately to comfort and encourage him, saying, "Do not be worried. Because I know President \_\_\_\_\_ of our country very well, if I only go and tell him about you, he will grant a general amnesty to you, and you will be released right away. You can just wait with a peace of mind." A few days later he was released on a general amnesty as his friend had said. Here, when the friend said, "I know President \_\_\_\_\_," he did not mean that he knew the President as far as the people know him as their president, but that he knew the president closely and personally. Likewise, to know the only true God and Jesus Christ whom He has sent does not merely mean to know God as the Creator and the King of the universe and Jesus as the Son of God and the Saviour who came to save the world, from a common-sense point of view. It means to know Them just as the friend of the man under death sentence knew the President \_\_\_\_\_ in-



timately. For instance, it is to know God as Enoch knew Him, who had walked with Him for three hundred years as a personal friend before he was taken up to heaven forever.

If God would give the eternal life to all who know Him as a matter of common sense as the Creator, and Jesus as God's Son and the Saviour, there would be few who cannot obtain eternal life. James said, "You believe that God is one; you do well. Even the demons believe and shudder" (James 2:19). Yes, even Satan and his angels and all the wicked of the world know and believe that God is the Creator, who gives life and blessing to man: even the idolaters and those possessed of devil acknowledge and believe and cry to God. Then shall God make this sinful world even more dreadful and desolate by giving them eternal life? No, never. Our heavenly Father will not, by giving them eternal life, make His universe more horrible. In the Bible He has plainly declared that He would restore His universe to its original state, sinless and holy, by removing such people forever "in the lake that burns with fire and sulphur" (Rev. 21:8).

Therefore the eternal life is a precious gift of God that He gives only to those who obey the precepts and words of the only true God and of Jesus Christ whom He has sent and become intimate friends with Them, always walking hand in hand as Enoch did in the old days. And these children He will invite to His everlasting kingdom as He did to Enoch.

In the Bible we read, "Joshua the son of Nun, the servant of the Lord, died at the age of one hundred and ten years.... and there arose another generation.... who did not know the Lord" (Judges 2:8,10). "Now the sons of Eli were sons of Belial; they knew not the Lord" (1 Sam. 2:12, K.J.V.). Do you think that the descendants of Joshua, the prominent leader of Israel did not know that the Lord is the Creator of heaven and earth, and that He had divided the Red Sea for their fathers, and in the wilderness fed them with manna for 40 years, and given them water from a rock? And because the sons of Eli the priest did not know the Lord as the Creator, is it written that they knew not God? Yes. They did know the God of Israel well. But they turned away from Him who would be pleased to give them life and blessing, and refused to be friends with Him like Enoch, and betrayed Him to live a dissipated and unruly life. Finally they perished in their sins. I wish that my brethren and sisters who read this book may take a lesson from them, and become close friends with God and Jesus as Enoch did. And They will give you all the rich treasures of universe unsparingly. One of them is the immortal life of God, the eternal life that we have so far talked about.

Eternal life is a gift of God which is filled with His love and heart, which He gives only to His friends one by one secretly. I pray that all who read this book with avidity shall receive the precious gift and enjoy everlasting happiness of eternal life.

## <The Importance of the Knowledge of the Only True God and Jesus Christ. >

### \*(1) The Knowledge of the Only True God

"There is no faithfulness or kindness, and no knowledge of God in the land" (Hosea 4:1). "My people are foolish, they know Me not; they are stupid children, they have no understanding" (Jer. 4:22). "My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge" (Hosea 4:6). "I desire... not sacrifice," but "the knowledge of God, rather than burnt offerings" (Hosea 6:6).

It is the darkness of misapprehension of God that is enshrouding the world. Men are losing their knowledge of His character. It has been misunderstood and misinterpreted. At this time a message from God is to be proclaimed, a message illuminating in its influence and saving in its power. His character is to be made known. Into the darkness of the world is to be shed the light of His glory, the light of His goodness, mercy, and truth. This is the work outlined by the prophet Isaiah in the words, "O Zion, that bringest good tidings, get thee up into the high mountains: O Jerusalem, that bringest good tidings, lift up thy voice with strength: lift it up, be not afraid; say unto the cities of Judah, Behold your God!" (Isa. 40:9). The last rays of merciful light, the last message of mercy to be given to the world, is a revelation of His character of love. The children of God are to manifest His glory. Through

their characters and lives they are to manifest the grace of God that He has done for them.

Today our knowledge of God is partial and imperfect. "But when the perfect comes, the imperfect will pass away" (1 Cor. 13:9,10). "Let us know, let us press on to know the Lord" (Hosea 6:3).

"If you cry out for insight and raise your voice for understanding, if you seek it like silver and search for it as for hidden treasures; then you will understand the fear of the Lord and find the knowledge of God" (Pro. 2:3-5). This knowledge is gained by meditating upon the word of God. And this treasure all who would give everything for it may earn.

In order to be representatives of God we must know Him first.

Moses knew God as a personal God. After this experience, He heard the call from heaven to exchange his shepherd's crook for the rod of authority, to leave his flock of sheep and take the leadership of Israel.

In order to be co-workers with God, in order to become like Him and to reveal His character, we must know Him aright. We must know Him as He reveals Himself. A knowledge of God is the foundation of all true education and of all true service. It is the only real safeguard against temptation. It is this alone that can make us like God in character. This is the knowledge needed by all who are working for the uplifting of their fellow men. Transformation of character, purity of life, efficiency in service, adherence to correct principles,



all depend upon a right knowledge of God. This knowledge is the essential preparation both for this life and for the life to come. "The knowledge of the Holy is understanding" (Pro. 9:10). Through a knowledge of Him are given unto us "all things that pertain unto life and godliness" (2 Peter 1:3). "This is life eternal, that they might know Thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom Thou hast sent" (John 17:3, K.J.V.). When we know God as it is our privilege to know Him, our life will be a life of a continual obedience. Through His children eventually will be made manifest the final and full display of the love of God to the world, and the world will be lightened with its glory.

(2) The Importance of the Knowledge of Jesus Christ

The world needs not so much as the expression of the love of Christ through men. All heaven is waiting for channels through which God can communicate the holy oil to men, which when received, is joy and blessing to their hearts. After the descent of the Holy Spirit, the disciples were so filled with love for Jesus and for those for whom He died, that hearts were melted by the words they spoke and the prayers they offered. There is nothing that Christ desires so much as agents who will represent to the world His Spirit and character.

When lifeless doctrines accomplish nothing, the love of Jesus will melt and attract the hearts of men. His ever-abiding love, His holiness, meekness, mercy, and

truth are to be revealed to the world through His disciples. Our love for Christ and for brethren will testify to the world that we have lived with Him and learned of Him. Then the whole world will be lightened with His glory.

(3) The Importance of the Knowledge of God and Jesus Christ

In His prayer to the Father, Christ said, "This is life eternal, that they might know Thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom Thou hast sent" (John 17:3, K.J.V.). This is true education. It imparts power. The experimental knowledge of God, and of Jesus Christ, whom He has sent, transforms man into the image of God. It gives to man the mastery of self, bringing every impulse and passion of the lower nature under the control of higher powers of the mind. It makes its possessor a son of God, and an heir of heaven. It brings him into communion with the mind of the Infinite, and opens to him the rich treasures of the universe. The knowledge of God and of Jesus Christ expressed in character is an exaltation above everything else that is esteemed on earth or in heaven. It is the very highest education. It is God's purpose that all who believe in Christ shall possess. The knowledge of God and Jesus Christ revealed in character of man is that which is esteemed of the greatest value in heaven and earth. It is the very highest education. This is the key that opens the portals of the heavenly city.

Eternal life is to know the only true God and Jesus Christ whom He has sent. But Satan the enemy of men with his angels is determined that men shall not have perfect knowledge of the love of God. But all heaven is anxious to see holy agents who will go to the world with the message of life today. "And I heard the voice of the Lord saying, 'Whom shall I send, and who will go for us?' . . . 'My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge'" (Isa. 6:8, Hosea 4:6).

Where are the sons and daughters of God who will answer to the voice of the Lord today?

## Chapter II. The Only True God (The Holy Father)

"This is life eternal, that they might know Thee the only true God." (John 17:3, K.J.V.)

We have already learned two ways and methods for eternal life, first of which is to know the only true God (John 17:3). In this chapter we will learn of the only true God in detail concerning what He is like, what relationship He bears to us, and what He does for us.



## **1. The Outward Appearance and Inward Heart of the True God**

Philip said to Jesus, "Lord, show us the Father, and we shall be satisfied" (John 14:8). This is a common question that has been raised by God's children who have not seen Him down through the ages since the days of Adam. So it was reasonable for Philip to make that request, which also represents our common desire. Perhaps there is no one who do not desire to see the heavenly Father who loved them "so much that He gave His only begotten Son." If there be any, they must be abnormal.

We already learned that we should know God as He reveals Himself in the Bible. Now we will have time to take a look at His face and appearance as He reveals Himself in the Bible. Unless we first know His face and appearance well, how can we love Him or make friends with Him?

In this world also, when one tries to make friends or choose a spouse, he first looks at the outward features of the person to see whether handsome or pretty, whether comely or ugly, and then have a chance to be confirmed of his (or her) inward heart. Likewise, in this chapter we will have time to meet with the only true God and hold intercourse with Him who is our Friend and our Love.

(1) The Outward Appearance of Our Heavenly Father

- \* Our Father has His head and hair.  
"As I looked... the hair of His head was like a pure wool" (Daniel 7:9).
- \* He has face.  
"And His servants shall worship Him," and "see His face" (Rev. 22:3,4).  
"Now we see... dimly, but then face to face" (1 Cor. 13:12)
- \* He has His back.  
"You shall see My back; but My face shall not be seen" (Exodus 33:23).  
"He who has seen Me has seen the Father" (John 14:9).  
"I and the Father are one" (John 10:30).
- \* He has the vocal cords and speaks.  
"the voice of the Lord" (1 Sam. 15:22)
- \* He has eyes and pupils.  
"the eyes of the Lord" (Pro. 15:3)  
"as the apple of His eye" (Deut. 32:10)
- \* He has nose.  
"a smoke in My nostrils" (Isa. 65:5)
- \* He has mouth and lips and speaks with them.  
"the mouth of God" (Matt. 4:4)  
"My lips" (Ps. 89:34)  
"Every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of the Lord" (Deut. 8:3)
- \* He has ears.  
"His ear" (Isa. 59:1)

- "Thou wilt incline Thine ear" (Ps. 10:17)
- \* He has arms.
  - "My arm" (Ps. 89:21)
  - "Thy outstretched arm" (1 Kings 8:42).
- \* He has hands and fingers.
  - "The Lord's hand" (Num. 11:23)
  - "Thy fingers" (Ps. 8:3)
  - "Did not My hand make all these things?" (Acts 7:50)
- \* He has legs.
  - "God the Almighty... His thigh" (Rev. 19:15,16).
- \* He has feet.
  - "The earth is My footstool" (Acts 7:49, N.I.V.)
  - "Thy feet" (Ps. 74:3, K.J.V.)
- \* He is clothed in raiment.
  - "His raiment was white as snow" (Dan. 7:9).
  - "He... appeared like jasper and carnelian" (Rev. 4:3).
  - "dwells in unapproachable light (raiment)" (1 Tim. 6:16)

As referred above, we can be assured that our heavenly Father, the only true God also has head and hairs, face and neck, and on His face eyes, nose, ears, and mouth and lips to speak with, and in His body front and back, arms and legs, and hands and feet as it is written. "God said, 'Let Us make man in Our image, after Our likeness'" (Gen. 1:26). This verse tells us that we were made in perfect accordance with His

form and image. Jesus said, "Have I been with you so long, and yet you do not know Me, Philip? He who has seen Me has seen the Father: how can you say, 'Show us the Father?'" (John 14:9) "I and My Father are one" (John 10:30) and your heavenly Father has the same image with Mine.

If there be any difference, it is that, while we have imperfect, corruptible and mortal bodies due to transgression, He is perfect, "high and lofty One who inhabits eternity" (Isa. 57:15), in whom are neither beginning nor end, who exists from everlasting, who is the "only Sovereign, the King of kings and Lord of lords, who alone has immortality and dwells in unapproachable light, whom no man (guilty) has ever seen or can see" (1 Tim. 6:15,16). Because He dwells in unapproachable light, no sinner who sees Him can survive. Therefore it is His great mercy and love for us not to reveal His face to us. But how grateful and joyful it is that it is not His will to leave His children alone in this sinful world who live "without sin" (Heb. 9:28) Our Father will again, for His obedient children, send His Son to the earth for the second time to bring back to His side those children who are living sinlessly, whom He knows personally. They shall all be "changed in a moment" (1 Cor. 15:51), and go to the Father with Jesus, to "see Him face to face" (1 Cor. 13:12).

The moment we shall see our Father's face after thousands of years of wait, what an inexpressible joy it will be! My brethren and sisters who read this book,



"May your spirit and soul and body be kept sound and blameless at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ" by living apart from sin on earth. (1 Thess. 5:23).

(2) The Inward Heart of Our Heavenly Father (character)

We have thus far learned that our Father is so goodlooking and perfect in all respects as He has revealed Himself in the Bible. Since He is so goodlooking, we can be proud of Him wherever we go as a friend and as an object of our love and worship.

Next, we will learn of our Father's heart; whether He is truly good and holy in character in harmony with His outward look or violent and fearful on the contrary. If His heart and character is good, it is all right; but if He is of terrible and fearful character, it is much safe and wise for us to give up making friends with Him beforehand. Anyhow, let us make decision after we study His character in detail in this hour.

**\* Heart of love**

"God is love" (1 John 4:16).

"He will renew you in His love" (Zeph. 3:17).

"God so loved the world" (John 3:16).

**\* Heart of jealousy**

"I the Lord your God am a jealous God" (Ex. 20:5).

"He is a jealous God" (Joshua 24:19).

**\* Heart of fondness**

"The Lord... delights" (1 Sam. 15:22).

"He loves righteous deeds" (Ps. 11:7).

**\* Heart of hatred**

"which the Lord hates" (Pro. 6:16)

"I hate double-minded men" (Ps. 119:113).

**\* Heart of joy**

"Complete my joy" (Phi. 2:4).

"with whom I am well pleased" (Matt. 3:17)

**\* Heart of dislike**

"I be alienated from you" (Jer. 6:8).

"I am weary of relenting" (Jer. 15:6).

**\* Heart of laughing**

"He who sits in the heavens laughs" (Ps. 2:4).

"I also will laugh" (Pro. 1:26).

**\* Heart of singing in joy**

"And heaven and earth shall unite in the Father's song of rejoicing: 'For this My son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found.' (Luke 15:24)" (C.O.L. p.206)

**\* Heart of crying, sighing and weeping**

"If you will not listen, My soul will weep in secret.... My eyes will weep bitterly and run down with tears" (Jer. 13:17).

"The Lord was sorry.... and it grieved Him to His heart" (Gen. 6:6).

"For the wound of... My people is My heart wounded, I mourn" (Jer. 8:21).

**\* Heart of wrath**

"the day of the wrath of the Lord" (Zeph. 1:18)

"the day of the Lord.... cruel, with wrath and fierce anger" (Isa. 13:9)

**\* Heart of mercy (pity)**

"the Lord pities those who fear Him" (Ps. 103:13).

"as I had mercy on you" (Matt. 18:33)

**\* Heart of vengeance**

"by no means dear the guilty, visiting the iniquity" (Ex. 34:7)

"The Lord is avenging" (Nahum 1:2).

**\* Heart of forgiveness**

"Let the wicked... return to our God, for He will abundantly pardon" (Isa. 55:7).

"I will not remember your sins" (Isa. 43:25).

**\* Heart of graciousness (mercifulness)**

"merciful and gracious, slow to anger, and abundant in steadfast love and faithfulness" (Ex. 34:6)

"He is kind to the ungrateful and the selfish" (Luke 6:35).

**\* Heart of goodness**

"Good and upright is the Lord" (Ps. 25:8).

"O taste and see that the Lord is good!" (Ps. 34:8)

**\* Heart of peace**

"He is a God of peace" (1 Cor. 14:33).

"peacemakers... shall be called sons of God" (Matt. 5:9).

**\* Heart of honesty**

"Upright is the Lord" (Ps. 25:8).

"A God of faithfulness... just and right is He" (Deut. 32:4).

**\* Heart of unchangeableness**

"with whom there is no variation or shadow due to change" (James 1:17)

"For I the Lord do not change" (Mal. 3:6).

**\* Heart of faithfulness**

"Know therefore that the Lord your God is... the faithful God" (Deut. 7:9).

"Who is faithful, the Holy One of Israel, who has chosen you" (Isa. 49:7)

**\* Heart of omniscience**

"Whither shall I go from Thy Spirit? Or whither shall I flee from Thy presence?" "Even the darkness is not dark to Thee, the night is bright as the day" (Ps. 139:7,12).

"for Thou, Thou only, knowest the hearts of all the children of men" (1 Kings 8:39).

**\* Heart of justice**

"for there is no perversion of justice with the Lord our God, or partiality, or taking bribes" (2 Chro. 19:7).

"judge the world in righteousness" (Acts 17:31)

**\* Heart of thoroughness in keeping His promises**

"God is not man, that He should lie, or a son of man, that He should repent. Has He said, and will He not do it? Or has He spoken, and will He not fulfill it?" (Num. 23:19).

"God desired to show... to the heirs of His promise the unchangeable character of His purpose... that... we might have strong encouragement" (Heb. 6:17,18).

"Know therefore that the Lord your God is... the faithful God who keeps covenant... with those who love Him and keep His covenant" (Deut. 7:9,10).

**\* Heart of thoroughness is repayment of reward and punishment**

"I am... bringing My recompense, to repay every one for what he has done" (Rev. 22:12).

"They (the wicked) will go away into eternal punishment, but the righteous into eternal life" (Matt. 25:46).

**\* Heart of diligence**

"My Father is working still, and I am working" (John 5:17).

"Truly, truly, I say to you, the Son can do nothing of His own accord, but only what He sees the Father doing; for whatever He does, that the Son does likewise" (John 5:19).

As we have now seen the general feature of our heavenly Father, we can be assured that His heart and character is almost the same as ours. Since He possesses affection just as we do, He loves one whom He loves, hates one whom He hates. When His love is rejected by His earthly children whom He has pursued with one-sided love, He gets disappointed and becomes jealous behind their back. It is because He loves them too much; if He did not love them, He would not become jealous. Therefore His jealousy is an another expression of His ardent love for them. And He feels happy at the sight of happiness, laughs at the sight of fun. He becomes sad at the sight of sorrow, sheds tears at the sight of greater sorrow, and wails when He sees

something even more woeful. He is so compassionate and loving that when He sees pitiful men, He is touched with pity, and would give away everything to comfort them. But He hates and is displeased with those who keep doing things loathsome. When we do something bad, He gets angry with us, and as we do worse deeds He becomes indignant. As we do unbearable, unpardonable things He rises up to give severe punishment and reprimand. But if we, though so sinful, return and ask for pardon, He changes His mind, and forgives us completely, and never remembers our past. And He restores His peace of mind right away. He is so honest as much as He loathes dishonesty Himself, and faithful, truthful. Therefore even at the risk of the honor of His throne and His name, He never changes His promise but always fulfills it. He repays the good, and the wicked according to what they have done even more perfectly and accurately than a computer or a calculator can, without the slightest miscalculation and partiality. He is the most truthful Homehead of our universal family who is at unceasing work for all His creations, especially for the good of His loving children, with an effort incomparable to sacrifices and services of any earthly parents for their children. Should we not forget this fact and be thankful for so amazing grace of our Father?

Because He is also an emotional Father just as we are, He speaks to us as follows, "I love those who love Me, and those who seek Me diligently shall find Me" (Pro. 8:17). "Those who honour Me I will honour, and



those who despise Me shall be lightly esteemed" (1 Sam. 2:30). "I will show Myself holy among those who are near Me, and before all the people I will be glorified" (Lev. 10:3). Therefore "I will look with favor on the faithful in the land, that they may dwell with Me; he who walks in the way that is blameless shall minister to Me" (Ps. 101:6). Azariah also exclaims, "Hear me... all the Judah... the Lord is with you, while you are with Him. If you seek Him, He will be found by you, but if you forsake Him, He will forsake you" (2 Chro. 15:2). Elder James also said, "Draw near to God, and He will draw near to you" (James 4:8). Solomon says that if we exalt Him, He will exalt us. Jesus who is best acquainted with the character of the heavenly Father spoke, "If God is glorified in him, God will also glorify him in Himself, and glorify him at once" (John 13:32). Jesus taught us that our heavenly Father rewards everyone unsparingly by all means without reserve even if He is glorified by one of His least children, however lowly or weak one may be.

Therefore I hope every family member shares love and friendship with our heavenly Father, which the world has no knowledge of, by giving full glory to each other.

Now we can see that His heart and character are not different from ours, and that He made us in perfect accordance with Him not only in His image but also in His character as He said, "Let us make man in Our image, after Our likeness" (Gen. 1:26). If there is any

difference, it is that in His heart there are no sin, no evil, and no untruthfulness; and that from the deep of His heart springs forth the fountain of love that sinners cannot possess or compare with anything. This love is His life and light. If He could be robbed of that love which is His life and light, He would be reduced to nothingness and His life would disappear. His whole self is love (1 John 4:16). He is the source of all the love in the universe; He is a bundle of love. To rob Him of His love is like removing intensely burning light and heat from the rays of the sun in the midsummer; if it could be done so, not only He Himself but the whole universe would become pitch-dark and cold; everything would fall desolate. But for the burning rays of love extending out unceasingly from Him, the universe could not exist; and it is easier and more reasonable for fishes to survive out of water than for the children of men to live without the sun-ray of His love, the light of His grace, or for any other worlds in the universe to live without the sun of love springing from Him unceasingly.

Another difference that He has from the children of earth is that He has a heart of omniscience. As nothing is hidden between heaven and earth under the bright sun, so are no one and nothing in the universe left unnoticed in the sight of God, to say nothing of the shallow, narrow hearts of men!

Now, since you readers have learned well about His heart and character, I hope you become His loving sons

and daughters who, from now on, render obedience to Him who is love Himself, whose life is love and whose entirety is love, submitting not for fear of His judgment or punishment but for fear of making Him sad, sigh and cry, and wail for you. And as He has promised, planned, and desired, He will send His Son at His exact preplanned time and date to bring us back to His everlasting holy city, to live with us forever as He did to Enoch our elder brother, and we shall "possess the kingdom forever, forever and ever" (Dan. 7:18). Amen. Praise the Lord!

## 2. The Love of the Father Thicker Than the Blood of the Cross and Stronger Than the Death of the Cross

"Behold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God" (1 John 3:1, K.J.V.).

"In this the love of God was made manifest among us, that God sent His only Son into the world, so that we might live through Him" (1 John 4:9).

I have once read a paragraph in "Early Writings" my favorite book on page 151: "Think ye that the Father yielded up His dearly beloved Son without a struggle? No, no. It was even a struggle with the God of heaven (our Father) whether to let guilty man perish, or to give His beloved Son "who knew no sin" (2 Cor. 5:21) to die for him." Yes. It was an unbearable, agonizing, and sorrowful perplexity to the Father of infinite mercy and love, whether to give His innocent Son to the world of darkness abounding with evil spirits (Satan) to be torn by wicked hands and slain mercilessly. On page 126 it is written, "I then saw the lovely Jesus... approach the exceeding bright light which enshrouded the Father... The anxiety of the angels seemed to be intense while Jesus was communing with His Father. Three times He was shut in by the glorious light about the Father, and the third time He came from the Father we could see His Person... He then made known to the angelic choir that a way of escape had been made for lost man."

After I had read this book. I was frequently captured by the thought of what a great pain and sacrifice our Father paid in sending His Son to save us! The news that earthly children had been fallen by transgression filled all heaven with sorrow and astonishment and angels ceased their songs of praise. Throughout the heavenly courts there was mourning and woeful silence. Now, the sorrow and perplexity of our heavenly Father was too great to be described by words: whether to let them perish in their sins or to give His darling Son who knew no sin to die for them, it was so sorrowful and tormenting hours of perplexity that He could not solve in limited hour. And Jesus who, with the angels out of the sanctuary, had been in deep sympathy with the Father, could not wait any longer but went into the Father who was in the sanctuary of exceeding bright light and entreated earnestly to permit Him to give His life as a ransom for the children of earth. Now, imagine the countenance of the Father beholding His Son. Beholding His Son entreating earnestly, how could He abandon His Son so lovely? The Father suggested to Him that He be left alone to have more time to think. And more agony and struggle began again. But the Son, in sympathy with the Father's exceeding great perplexity, could not wait any longer and went into the Father to entreat again. The Father, beholding the face of the Son who was standing before Him, could never, never yield up His innocent Son who knew no sin (2 Cor. 5:21) to die for sinners. He again suggested to His Son to let Him alone

to have more time to think. Again terrible agony and perplexity began. But Jesus who had been waiting outside the sanctuary for the Father's decision with the angels equally absorbed in the same sorrow, could not merely watch the ever deepening agony and unceasing struggle, so He went in to see the Father for the third time with a firm resolution and pleaded all the more earnestly. And beholding His countenance and listening to His pleading, God decided to give His only Son "that whoever believes in Him may have eternal life" (John 3:16). What a tremendous sacrifice and agony of the Father it was! There are many who speak much about the agony of Jesus on Mount Gethsemane but few speak about the agony of the Father which had taken place in heaven beforehand. The agony of Jesus on Mt. Gethsemane was merely for the sinful children on earth but the Father was moaning pressed down by double burdens of agony. He was under a tremendous agony for Jesus His only Son "who knew no sin" on top of His enormous worry for the fallen race. O what a grievous agony of the Father it was! Jesus the Son of God, as He fell prostrate in agonizing cry, had the presence of the Father by His side to reply to His prayer and the attendance of angels to give Him strength and encouragement. But the Father who had been agonizing over such tremendous double burdens had none of these help. How many are there who give sincere thanks to Him for so tremendous sacrifice? So tremendous is the love of the Father for



sinner, and so great is the sacrifice and suffering for His dear Son — they are mysteries that have been hidden from sinners of the earth, from angles of heaven, that neither heaven nor earth could comprehend. Let us at this moment bow down and pay tribute to our heavenly Father. His love is "higher than the heavens — what can you do?... deeper than the depths of the grave — what can you know?" (Job 11:8, N.I.V.).

...He is kind to the ungrateful and the selfish... "as the heavens are higher than the earth" (Luke 6:35, Isa. 55:9).

I would like to introduce a phrase from another book, that is, "The Desire of Ages", which particularly illustrates the life of Jesus. It is written on page 478, "In all ages, philosophers and teachers have been presenting to the world theories by which to satisfy the soul's need. Every heathen nation has had its great teachers and religious systems offering some other means of redemption than Christ, turning the eyes of men away from the Father's face, and filling their hearts with fear of Him who has given them only blessing. The trend of their work is to rob God of that which is His own, both by creation and by redemption. And these false teachers rob man(soul) as well. Millions of human beings are bound down under false religions, in the bondage of slavish fear, of stolid indifference, toiling like beasts of burden, bereft of hope or joy or aspiration here, and with only a dull fear of the hereafter."

What a terrible and miserable religion it is! What a

great disappointment and distress it must be to our Father and Jesus! Therefore it was to remove the absurd misapprehension, by revealing to the world the infinite love of God, that Jesus came to live among men. It was to make manifest the Father that the Son of God came from heaven. "No one has ever seen God: the only Son, who is in the bosom of the Father. He has made Him known" (John 1:18). "No one knows the Son except the Father, and no one knows the Father except the Son and any one to whom the Son chooses to reveal Him" (Matt. 11:27).

Jesus desired to help them understand how wonderful love God is caring for them with. He taught them that God is in search of every lost one, saying, "As a father pities his children, so the Lord pities those who fear Him" (Ps. 103:13). The kind of God has never been introduced to the world by any other religion but by the truth of the Bible. Pagan churches falsely represent God: Not as the God of love, but as an evil god that is pleased with sacrifices. Even the Israelites were ignorant of the teachings of the prophets of God. To reveal the parental love of God is a basic question: for it is a new gift for the world.

Just before His crucifixion, Jesus said to His disciples who, though they were boasting about their loyalty to Jesus, would flee away after a little while for their lives leaving Him alone. "The hour is coming, indeed it has come, when you will be scattered, every man to his home, and will leave Me alone: yet I am not alone,

for the Father is with Me" (John 16:32). Yes. When God of mercy and love sent His Son to save sinners. He did not send Him alone to the world of darkness which is full of evil spirits (Satan). He came together with Him and walked along ever with Him from the manger in Bethlehem to the cross of Calvary. Even the evil parents of earth, when their children should go through rugged paths or to dangerous places, do not allow them to go alone, but go with them carrying them on their backs or in the bosom or holding their hands; how much more would loving merciful God forbid letting His only Son go alone to the world who was as innocent as a lamb? Jesus said, "He who sent Me is with Me; He has not left Me alone, for I always do what is pleasing to Him" (John 8:29). He again said, "I am not alone, I stand with the Father who sent Me" (John 8:16).

Perhaps you remember the 35th verse of Matthew 27 — "They crucified Him. This verse makes me feel choked with sorrow and makes me drop my head. The ungrateful, outrageous mob were jumping at Jesus like "brute dogs" (Ps. 22:16), nailing the tender hands of the Son of God to the cross mercilessly who had given up His position as a heavenly Prince and came down to save them. Now, behold the Father standing beside Him who had never left Him alone. He who had been always walking with the Son was then watching His last hour, how He was being treated. As I behold His look I cannot but drop my head. As the outrageous

mob were nailing the hands and feet of the Son of God, with the echo of pounding, they were truly nailing the heart of the Father who was grasping His Son beside Him. As I imagine the scene, I am overcome with sorrow and cannot but drop my head.

And there is a verse that makes me pour out tears, that is Matthew 27:46 — "My God, My God, why hast Thou forsaken Me?"

Here Jesus the Son of God, after His final cry of agony — "My God, My God, why hast Thou forsaken Me?", breathed His last and dropped His head. Now I again behold the Father standing beside Him. As I behold the Father holding His Son "who knew no sin" (2 Cor. 5:21), my heart feels bursting with grief. As for Jesus the Son of God, everything ceased with His innocent death, but behold the wailing Father hugging the dead body of His beloved Son slain unjustly without sin.

O He loved the world so much. See what love the Father has given us, that we should be called the children of God... The reason why the world does not know us is that it did not know Him" (1 John 3:1). "In this the love of God was made manifest among us, that God sent His only Son into the world, so that we might live through Him" (1 John 4:9). "In this is love, not that we loved God but that He loved us and sent His Son to be the expiation for our sins" (1 John 4:10). "For our sake He made Him to be sin who knew no sin, so that in Him we might become the

righteousness of God" (2 Cor. 5:21). "For surely it is not with angels" of heaven "that He is concerned but with the descendants of Abraham (sinners)" (Heb. 2:16) to "deliver all those who through fear of death were subject to lifelong bondage" (Heb. 2:15). "For God so loved the world that He gave His only Son... not to condemn the world, but that the world might be saved through Him" (John 3:16,17).

But it is the darkness of misapprehension of God that is enshrouding the world. Men are losing the knowledge of His character. It has been misunderstood and misinterpreted. At this time a message from God is to be proclaimed, a message illuminating in its influence and saving in its power. His character is to be made known. Into the darkness of the world is to be shed the light of His glory, the light of His goodness, mercy, and truth. This is the work outlined by the prophet Isaiah in the words, "Get you up to a high mountain, O Zion, herald of good tidings: lift up your voice with strength, O Jerusalem, herald of good tidings, lift it up, fear not; say to the cities of Judah, 'Behold your God!'" (Isa. 40:9).

All heaven is waiting for sons and daughters of God who will go forth into the world with the love of the Father and proclaim it. This is the final glorious work at the close of earth's history prophesied by the prophet Malachi, "Behold, I will send you Elijah the prophet before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the Lord: and He shall turn the heart of the fathers to the children, and the heart of the children to their

fathers, lest I come and smite the earth with a curse" (Mal. 4:5,6, K.J.V.).

Now, may Elijahs of today raise up your hands, and answer to the voice of the Lord, "And I heard the voice of the Lord saying, 'Whom shall I send, and who will go for Us?' (Isa. 6:8).

O the agony of the Father greater than that of the Son! The struggle of the Father heavier than that of the Son! The love of the Father thicker than the blood of the cross! The love of the Father stronger than the death of the cross! The love of the Father broader and greater than the universe! The love of the Father that neither the world nor sinners know! The love of the Father that neither the righteous nor angels know! The love of the Father neither heaven nor the earth know! The love that "no one knows except the Son and any one to whom the Son chooses to reveal the Father" (Matt. 11:27). Where are the Elijahs today who will go forth with this love? "And I heard the voice of the Lord saying, Whom shall I send, and who will go for Us?" (Isa. 6:8).



### 3. Our Real Father Who Has Truly Begotten Us

“Jesus, when He began His ministry, was about thirty years of age, being the son (as was supposed) of Joseph, the son of Heli, the son of Matthat, the son of Levi.... the son of Noah, the son of Lamech, the son of Methuselah, the son of Enoch, the son of Jared, the son of Mahalaleel, the son of Cainan, the son of Enos, the son of Seth, the son of Adam, the son of God” (Luke 3:23-38).

To rephrase this, “Jesus’ father is Joseph, whose father is Heli, whose father is Matthat, whose father is Levi.... whose father is Noah, whose father is Lamech, whose father is Methuselah, whose father is Enoch, whose father is Jared, whose father is Mahalaleel, whose father is Cainan, whose father is Enos, whose father is Seth, whose father is Adam, whose Father is God”.

To still put it another way, it means that “Jesus was born of Joseph (Mary), born of Heli, born of Matthat, born of Levi.... born of Noah, born of Lamech, born of Methuselah, born of Enoch, born of Jared, born of Mahalaleel, born of Cainan, born of Enos, born of Seth, born of Adam, born of God”. Therefore our Father in heaven is our real Father who has given birth to us personally.

#### A question!

You may ask a question. “In Genesis 1:26 God said, ‘Let Us make man in Our image, after Our likeness.’ He never said He would give birth to us and why do you insist that God has borne us personally from His body (womb)?” This is a natural question. But I still give the same identical answer: for truly our heavenly Father is our real Father who gave birth to us personally.

Would you please afford me a short time so that I may clarify this fact?

Animals like the cow or the deer bring forth youngs that look just like themselves. Flying birds like sparrows or pigeons also bring forth youngs bearing resemblance to themselves. Man also give birth to youngs (children) that bear considerable resemblance to him. What we are to know is that there are slight differences in the way they produce their youngs respectively. Animals like the cow or the deer bear youngs through the womb in their belly and breed by feeding milk out of the sacs that are in their belly. But the birds like sparrows or pigeons or chickens are different: as we know well, they bring forth the young from their bodies not by means of the womb but through so called egg-sac, not through the genital organ but through the anus. And even the youngs (eggs) look like a round stone that has no eyes, nose, or mouth, and then they spend a period of time in the

bosom of the brooding mother during which blood vessels, bones, eyes, nose, and feathers are formed. And after that they come out in considerable resemblance to their mother. Out in the world they are not fed on milk but manage to grow by pecking up worms and grains. Now we can see that there is so great incomprehensible difference between four-footed animals and birds with the feather in respect of methods of reproducing and breeding their youngs. But the similiarity is that they all end up having love-ly youngs that resemble themselves considerably in character, shape, face, and body. Only in the ways they bring forth and breed their young are entirely different.

Likewise, there is an entire difference in respect of producing lives between us bodily creatures and our heavenly Father, bodiless Creator — "a Spirit" (John 4:24). While man as a bodily creature, like animals, give birth to a child by means of the womb in his body, God the Creator, because He is a bodiless Spirit, produces lives by means of His Creator's womb and raises them in His own way having no body Himself unlike man. It is through this Creator's womb that He produces and brings up His children. Mysterious as it is, it may not be easily understood. As birds and animals cannot understand each other's methods of yielding and breeding their youngs, so it is hard for us, bodily creatures to understand the way Creator God, bodiless Spirit produces lives. But if we ponder it upon deep, it is not so hard to understand. As for us, when a baby is born after a period of ten months in the womb of

its mother, it begins to be fed on the liquid from the milk sac of her breast like the four-footed animal. But our heavenly Father in the beginning gave birth to Adam and Eve by means of His spiritual Creator's womb, and fed them with coarse foods such as herbs yielding seed, all fruits and the fruit of the tree of life instead of milk since He is a spiritual Father, flying God with no breast just as the flying birds having no breast feed their youngs on coarse foods instead of milk. Flying birds and crawling animals are entirely different in methods of giving birth to their youngs but consequently they all end up having their youngs that resemble themselves perfectly. Likewise, the way we, as bodily men, have our children is entirely different from the way God of Spirit, the Creator has His children. But consequently we both have children who perfectly resemble us respectively.

Therefore He said in the Bible, "You thought that I was one like yourself" (Ps. 50:21). But people have so limited and narrow mind that they would not willingly acknowledge or understand matters concerning God the Creator who is a bodiless Spirit; some even cast ridicule as the flying birds laugh at the way four-footed animals produce their youngs, and the four-footed animals at the flying birds of their stonelike eggs without eyes, nose, or mouth, that shall be their youngs. But Jesus assured us, "call no man your father on earth, for you have one Father," who has begotten you personally, "who is in heaven" (Matt. 23:9). And Malachi, who knew this fact, said, "Have we not

all one Father?" (Mal 2:10) That is why Jesus said, "Pray then like this: Our Father which art in heaven" (Matt. 6:9), and from now on call Him your "own (real) Father" (John 5:18). Jesus, when He was on earth, "called God His own (real) Father" (John 5:18). "This was why the Jews sought all the more to kill Him" (John 5:18) and after all, they killed God's real Son Jesus. Likewise, who can guarantee that in the last days also, those who have not accepted God as their real Father will not, out of jealousy, hate and persecute God's real children who have accepted Him as their real Father? "When the tenants saw the Son, they said to themselves, 'This is the heir; come, let us kill him and have his inheritance'" (Matt. 21:38). Jesus the real Son of God assures us today again that we are God's real sons and daughters as He is and says, "Go to My brethren and say to them, I am ascending to My Father and your Father, to My God and your God" (John 20:17).

Regardless of all this, we have an inseparable blood relationship with God. We are His offsprings, and He is our real Father; because God gave birth to man (Adam), and man (Mary) gave birth to God (Jesus). Based on Biblical genealogy, and also on human blood relationship it is an undeniable truth that the only true God in heaven is our real Father. Therefore it would have been much better if the writer of the Bible had written Genesis 1:26 as "Let Us give birth to man in Our image," instead of "Let Us make man in Our im-

age, after Our likeness. . . . The Lord (our heavenly Father) . . . said to me, "You are My son, today I have begotten you" (Ps. 2:7).

Dear my brethren and sisters of the world! Let us not then, from now on, pray spiritlessly as we used to do while we did not know our real Father. But let us offer powerful prayers which is our deserved right as His real sons, that will touch the deep inside of our Father, by saying, "Our Father in heaven!" (Matt. 6:9). "Our real Father in heaven" (John 5:18), "My Father in heaven" (Matt. 26:39) "My real Father in heaven" (John 5:18) "My Daddy in heaven" (Gal. 4:6) "My real Daddy in heaven" (John 5:18, Gal. 4:6 in Common Translation of Korean Bible Society). Let us not behave awkwardly as we kneel in prayer as if we were His foster sons or daughters, but act boldly and with great dignity as real sons and daughters of God, of the King of the universe. Even the sons and daughters of the kings and presidents of this world behave themselves with dignity and enjoy great advantages, how much more we deserve to be proud as the princes and princesses of the King of heaven, of the King of the universe, of the King of kings, and Lord of lords! In spite of this evident truth, if you, my brethren are ashamed to testify to the world and to people that the only true God in heaven is your real Father who has given birth to you, and has brought you up, listen to the word of God, "I tell you, everyone who acknowledges Me before men, (I) also will



acknowledge before the angels of God; but he who denies Me before men will be denied before the angels of God" (Luke 12:8,9). I hope that you keep in mind that eternal life is given by the only true God to those who acknowledge and serve Him as their real Father (John 17:3).

In this world there are a lot of adopted sons and daughters and stepsons and stepdaughters under one father, and in the orphanage there are hundreds of sons and daughters under one president. They all call the president their father. But there are only one or two or several, not all of them, who can inherit his estate, his birthright, and succeed his lineage, and they may only be his real sons and daughters. We all know this well. Therefore "what does the Scripture say?" "Cast out the slave and her son; for the son of the slave shall not inherit with the (real) son of the free woman" (Gal. 4:30). "So, brethren, we are not children of the slave but of the free woman" (Gal. 4:31). "Therefore do not throw away your confidence, which has a great reward," "for yet a little while, the coming One shall come" (Heb. 10:35,37). Then Jesus will exclaim, "Come, O blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world" (Matt. 25:34). This joyful bidding shall be heard to God's real children. May we all meet there together with Jesus then!

Praise the Lord! Glory to our real Father!

< Our Prayer >

My real Father in Heaven!

I am very thankful to you for showing plainly to me, your foolish son that the holy God in heaven is my real Father. Now, all heaven and earth and the universe have become new and become mine, for the whole universe is Yours, my Father's.

But Father, my dear Father! Send again quickly Jesus Christ my Eldest Brother and take me and my brethren to Your side, for I do not want to stay in this world any longer where abound innumerable evil spirits of Satan. Only in heaven are found everlasting joy, peace, and happiness. To my Father who has borne and brought me up, in the name of Jesus Christ my Eldest Brother I pray...

— Amen —

#### 4. Our Real Father Who Made Us a Sweet Home as a Branch Family of Heaven

"Lift up your eyes on high and see; who created these?" (Isa. 40:26).

"For every house is built by someone, but the builder of all things is God" (Heb. 3:4).

"The God who made the world and everything in it, being the Lord of heaven and earth..." (Acts 17:24).

"The earth is the Lord's and the fullness thereof, the world and those who dwell therein" (Ps. 24:1).

"The heavens are the Lord's heavens, but the earth He has given to the sons of men" (Ps. 115:16).

Our Father who has begotten us is also the most skillful Carpenter in the universe, peerless in His superb skill. That is probably why Jesus of Nazareth His Son was also a carpenter.

"It is He (our heavenly Father)... who stretches out the heavens like a curtain" (Isa. 40:22).

"He has founded it upon the seas and established it upon the rivers" (Ps. 24:2).

He "has measured the waters in the hollow of His hand and marked off the heavens with a span, enclosed the dust of the earth in a measure and weighed the mountains in scales and the hills in a balance" (Isa. 40:12). With elaborate design and accurate measurement "He founded it: He did not create it to be empty, but formed it to be inhabited" (Isa. 45:18, N.I.V.). And then "He made from one every nation of men

to live on all the face of the earth" (Acts 17:26). "And God saw everything that He had made, and behold, it was very good" (Gen. 1:31).

What an excellent workmanship of our Father it is! What a loving and tender care for His children! The first home that our Father has made for us was not like that of today, dark and dreary and filthy into which, because the roof (the sky) is collapsed, rain and snow pour down. It was always new, bright, sunny, mild and comfortable; because there was neither snow nor rainstorm, beautiful flowers never faded and not a leaf of the tree fell to the ground. There were no tears, no pain, no sorrow, no sigh; and there was no sound of mourning over death of family members. It was a home in which no shadow of sorrow could be found; instead, it was always full of joy and happiness, immortal life, unceasing pleasure, cheerful smiles and song of praises. It was not like a haunt of horrible demons where a bunch of thieves hang around in groups and burglars and murderers swarmed like today. Neither burglars and murderers nor even mischievous boys that mimic thieves were found there. Lions and deer, wolves and lambs, and all sorts of animal and birds, all lived together; neither the sound of roaring nor even a breath of fury, anger were heard there. They were all one family, loving and helping, playing together in peace and joy and love. O what a beautiful home it was! But now where has it disappeared into? Why are we to live in this terrible home? This home has become so horrible that daily events

of terror make us doubt what we see and hear and tremble with surprise and fear. Why has it become like this? Before we search the reason, having our sorrows restrained, let us take a look at our first home that our Father made us with His own hands with devotion and love.

After God had created the heaven and the earth (Gen. 1:1), on the earth He "planted a garden in Eden in the east; and there He put the man whom He had formed. And out of the ground the Lord God made to grow every tree that is pleasant to the sight and good for food, the tree of life also in the midst of the garden, and the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. A river" of life "flowed out of Eden to water the garden, and there it divided and became four rivers. The name of the first is Pishon; it is the one which flows around the whole land of Havilah, where there is gold; and the gold of that land is good; bdellium and onyx stone are there. The second, . . . the third, . . . the fourth. . . . The Lord God took the man and put him in the garden of Eden to till it and keep it" (Gen. 2:8-15). "And behold, it was very good." (Gen. 1:31). And above all "God blessed the seventh day and hallowed it" (Gen. 2:3).

While reading a book called "The Story of Redemption" I was attracted by the following story: "As the earth came forth from the hand of its Maker, it was exceedingly beautiful. Its surface was diversified with mountains, hills, and plains, interspersed with noble

rivers and lovely lakes; but the hills and mountains were not abrupt and rugged, abounding in terrific steeps and frightful chasms, as they now do; the sharp, tagged edges of earth's rocky frame-work were buried beneath fruitful soil, which everywhere produced a luxuriant growth of verdure. There were no loathsome swamps or barren deserts. Graceful shrubs and delicate flowers greeted the eye at every turn. The heights were crowned with trees more majestic than any that now exist. The air, untainted by foul miasma, was clear and healthful. The entire landscape outvied in beauty the decorated grounds of the proudest palace. The angelic host viewed the scene with delight, and rejoiced at the wonderful works of God."

"As Adam came forth from the hand of his Creator", from the womb of his Father, "he was of lofty stature and perfect symmetry. His countenance bore the ruddy tint of health and glowed with the light of life and joy. Adam's height was much greater than that of men who now inhabit the earth. Eve was somewhat less in stature; yet her form was noble and full of beauty. The sinless pair wore no artificial garments; they were clothed with a covering of light and glory, such as the angels wear. So long as they lived in obedience to God, this robe of light continued to enshroud them."

"Everything that God had made was the perfection of beauty, and nothing seemed wanting that could contribute to the happiness of the holy pair; yet the



Creator gave them still another token of His love by preparing a garden (Eden) especially for their home. A portion of their time was to be occupied in the happy employment of dressing the garden, and a portion in receiving the visits of angels, listening to their instruction, and in happy meditation. Their labour was not wearisome, but pleasant and invigorating. This beautiful garden was to be their home, their special residence.

In this garden the Lord placed fruit-trees of every description, for usefulness and beauty, also lovely flowers which filled the air with fragrance. Everything was tastefully and gloriously arranged. These were to be the food of the holy pair as He had designed. There were lovely vines, growing upright, laden with a lot of fruits, that are not seen after the fall. The fruits were big and of varieties of colours, some soft-red, red, dark red, and soft-green. It was the work of Adam and Eve to train the branches of the vine to form bowers, thus making for themselves a dwelling from living trees covered with foliage and fruit. There were fragrant flowers of every hue in rich profusion. In the midst of the garden stood the tree of life, surpassing in glory all other trees. Its fruit appeared like apples of gold and silver, and had the power to perpetuate life, and the leaves contained healing properties.

Very happy were the holy pair in Eden. Unlimited control was given them of every living thing. The lion and the lamb sported together peacefully and harmlessly around them or slumbered at their feet. Birds of

every variety of color and plumage fluttered among the trees and flowers, and about Adam and Eve, while their mellow-toned music echoed among the trees in sweet accord to the praises of their Creator. Adam and Eve were very happy surrounded by the little singers listening to their songs of joy. This holy pair sang with them songs of love and praise and admiration to God and to His Son for all the work of His love that surrounded them. Unceasingly appearing beauty and glory of Eden so filled them with greater reverence, that they expressed their gratitude and admiration to their Creator (their Father)."

This was our original home that our real Father provided for our share in the beginning. But to this peaceful home a great storm of misery, disaster, and misfortune approached. This peaceful home was suddenly invaded by Satan, the outrageous, lawless enemy in the universe, the notorious murderer, the bandit, the well-known deceiver, with his innumerable agents. They did not carry out their plan like the unwise armies of the world do, flourishing swords riding on horses or blowing trumpets with a battle cry. If they had invaded in this manner we could have easily defeated them. "The great dragon... that ancient serpent who is called the Devil and Satan, the deceiver of the whole world" (Rev. 12:9), who was thrown down from heaven, defeated by "Michael, the great Prince" (Dan. 12:1, Rev. 12:7). — He is the chief of treacherous, tricky thieves, notorious for his deceiv-

ing wits and schemes: who succeeded in seducing one third of the heavenly angels (Rev. 12:4). And it was he that devised a scheme to plunder our peaceful home.

Commanding his innumerable agents to be in silence, he headed himself to encroach upon the earth and crawled sneakingly toward the midst of our Eden home, deeply and deeply into the inner part of our Eden home, and gained access to Eve, who was simple-minded and inexperienced. After gaining control over so pure and innocent Eve with ease, the cunning enemy used Eve, a loving companion of her husband to seduce Adam. And so Adam was ensnared by the scheme of the merciless enemy, and immediately our peaceful home fell into the murderer's hands and has become a den of thieves and burglars of today. From then on we have been wandering aimlessly from place to place as homeless nomads for six thousand years till now.

But our real Father who has so loved us that He has begotten us and brought us up and made us a beautiful home (the earth) and a garden (Eden) as our eternal nest with so great love was terribly worried since He knew that His loving children had fallen into the hands of Satan the outrageous deceiver. But in order to reclaim us, He wandered about day and night to look for His lost children making total sacrifices of Himself and at last He was able to repossess us into His bosom as He so badly wanted. O what a persevering love it is! What a wondrous love it is! What a love it is!

**\* Back to Our Home Again**

Now let us go back to our home, our original home; back to our sweet home that our Father has made for us, and restored for us. Our enemy who had robbed us of our home has been forever defeated by our Lord Jesus our Eldest Brother, who has recovered us our home after a blood-shedding battle. On top of our recovered home is flapping the glorious blood-stained banner of Immanuel. And our Father stands waiting for us, to return us our home that He has made for us with so great love and elaboration.

My dear brethren and sisters! Let us all together return to our sweet home, our eternal home, where our loving Father stands waiting for us. Let us enjoy there the life of everlasting happiness with our Father forever and ever!

“You, O tower of the flock, hill of the daughter of Zion, to you shall it come, the former dominion shall come, the kingdom of the daughter of Jerusalem” (Micah 4:8).

“Thou shalt no more be termed Forsaken; neither shall thy land any more be termed Desolate: but thou shalt be called Hephzi-bah (My delight is in her), and thy land Beulah (Married): for the Lord delighteth in thee, and thy land shall be married” (Isa. 62:4, K.J.V.).  
Praise the Lord! Glory to our Father!

### **5. Our Real Father Who Has Chosen Us and Given Us to Jesus His Eldest Son**

"You are a people holy to the Lord your God, and the Lord has chosen you to be a people for his own possession, out of all the peoples that are on the face of the earth" (Deut. 14:2). "You are a chosen race, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, God's own people," that are... "called, and chosen" (1 Peter 2:9, Rev. 17:14). "I chose you out of the world" (John 15:19).

It is written in Deuteronomy 14:2 that the Lord God has chosen us to be His holy people. We know well that the triune Gods—the Father, the Son, and the Spirit—are all termed 'the Lord'. Then who out of the three has chosen us among all peoples of the earth? This is the issue we would like to question into.

But now I would like to present the fact through the Bible that it is God the holy Father, our real Father who has chosen us.

Most of believers today think that Jesus alone has chosen them (John 15:16) and takes care of them, while the Father is not concerned about them, but searches for their faults and sins with sharp eyes, and is stingy with love and pardon, and always searches out to give judgment and orders.

But I would like to prove based on the Bible that this conception of God is absolutely contrary to reality: that our Father is not at all like as we think.

I again say that **He** is our real Father who is not in

the slightest degree less concerned about His sin-polluted children than Jesus or the Spirit. He is so much concerned about us that "even the very hairs of our head are all numbered" by Him (Matt. 10:30). He draws near to every child of His and takes tender care of him with individual love. It is our heavenly Father who has chosen us out of all peoples of the earth and made us heirs of His everlasting kingdom.

Every child of His that has lived on earth down through the ages have been "predestinated according to the purpose of Him, "...the only true God, "...who worketh all things after the counsel of His own will" (Eph. 1:11, John 17:3). "The God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ... has blessed us in Christ with every spiritual blessing in heavenly places, even as He chose us in Him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and blameless before Him. He destined us in love to be His sons through Jesus Christ, according to the purpose of His will" (Eph. 1:3-5). "Thou art the Lord, the God who didst choose Abram and bring him forth out of Ur of the Chaldeans and give him the name Abraham" (Neh. 9:7). And after that God also said to Moses, "Say this to the people of Israel, 'The Lord, the God of your fathers, the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob, has sent me to you'" (Ex 3:15). We see that it was our Father who chose Moses, the leader of Israel. And "the God of Abraham and of Isaac and of Jacob, the God of our fathers, glorified his servant Jesus," whom He had chosen to be the Saviour of the world. (Acts 3:13)



While I was preaching in a church in regard to this subject, one of the brethren asked, "But wasn't it Jesus who chose the apostle Paul?" My answer to him was "No," and we opened the Bible. Let us now have time to investigate the matter. Let us open Acts 22:13-15 first. This is the word delivered by Ananias a messenger of the Lord, "Brother Saul, receive your sight.... The God of our fathers (the Father) appointed you to know His (the Father's) will, to see the Just One (Jesus of Nazareth) and to hear a voice from His (Jesus') mouth < on the road to Damascus >; for you will be a witness for Him (God) to all men." And later he praised the God of heaven in gratitude who had called and chosen him, "Blessed be the God the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ.... He chose us in Him before the foundation of the world" (Eph. 1:3, 4). Therefore he exclaimed, "By the grace of God (the Father of Jesus) I am what I am... It was not I, but the grace of God which is with me" (1 Cor. 15:10).

Now let us find out about Jesus' 12 disciples. It apparently looks as though they were chosen and called by Jesus Himself, but evident is the fact that our heavenly Father Himself chose them and committed them to Jesus His Son. What we are to know first is that before Jesus chose and ordained the twelve, He had come to His Father and spent one night in prayer. For it was the most profound and grave matter for Him to choose His disciples who would be entrusted with the work of redemption of the world that the Father with His Son had begun with great sacrifice, and upon

whom the success or failure of the work of redemption depended. "In these days He went out to the mountain to pray; and all night He continued in prayer to God. And when it was day, He called His disciples and chose from them twelve, whom He named apostles" (Luke 6:12,13). They were the disciples whom God has given to Jesus in answer to His previous night's prayer—"O My Father who sent Me! Choose for Me disciples who will take up the work of redemption that You have planned." And then He said, "No one can come to Me unless the Father who sent Me draws him" (John 6:44). "All that the Father gives Me shall come to Me; and him who comes to Me I will not cast out" (John 6:37). "I give them eternal life, and they shall never perish, and no one shall snatch them out of My hand" (John 10:28). In these words He pledged Himself to protect and preserve steadfastly those whom His Father had given Him.

Indeed there is no one under heaven who can snatch us out of the mighty hand of Jesus Christ our General who has overcome the world and has been always victorious in the battle with Satan the great enemy. Our stray and fall is not by the force of the enemy but by our own choice. Unless we agree, Satan the devil cannot snatch us from the bosom of our Lord Jesus Christ. "He who was born of God keeps him, and the evil one does not touch him" (1 John 5:18). He also guaranteed a double-fold wall of protection—"My Father is greater than all, and no one is able to snatch them out of the Father's hand" (John 10:29). What a mighty and

thorough, undestroyable protection of our Father and our Eldest Brother who neither slumber nor sleep to guard us! Moreover we are also surrounded by three and fourfold wall of protection of the Holy Spirit and the attendance of thousands and ten thousands of angels.

Finally, who has chosen you reader? Let us incline our ears to the Bible, the true witness of God. "God is faithful, by whom you are called into the fellowship of His Son, Jesus Christ our Lord" (1 Cor. 1:9). "The Lord has chosen you to be a people for his own possession, out of all the peoples that are on the face of the earth" (Deut. 14:2). "You are a chosen race, . . . God's own people" (1 Peter 2:9). We are His own children whom He has chosen and called out of the world. What a wonderful grace and love of our Father it is! If our Father had not chosen us out of the world and drawn to Jesus, whoever today could have enjoyed communion with Jesus and become His friend?

"In this is love, not that we loved God, . . . He first loved us" (1 John 4:10,19).

"All we like sheep have gone astray" (Isa. 53:6), but He loved us so much and made us His children.

—Hymn—

1. The love of God is greater far than tongue or pen  
can ever tell;  
It goes beyond the highest star, and reaches to the  
lowest hell:  
The guilty pair, bowed down with care, God gave  
His Son to win;  
His erring child he reconciled, and pardoned from  
his sin.  
Oh, love of God, how rich and pure! How  
measureless and strong!  
It shall forevermore endure—the saints, and angels'  
song.
2. Could we with ink the ocean fill, and were the skies  
of parchment made;  
Were every stalk on earth a quill, and every man  
a scribe by trade;  
To write the love of God above would drain the  
ocean dry;  
Nor could the scroll contain the whole, though stretched  
from sky to sky.  
Oh, love of God, how rich and pure! How  
measureless and strong!  
It shall forevermore endure—the saints, and angels'  
song.

### \* Questions and Answers about the Doctrine of Foresight and Predestination

As I was travelling by a train a smart young man who was sitting in front of me asked me a question. "Excuse me, but are you not a pastor?" This question led him on saying, "In church I learned that because God had already chosen those whom He would save a long time ago, it would be useless for those who had not been chosen to believe Him, but the chosen one by all means would be saved. Is it the true doctrine of the Bible?"

This is an issue that not alone perplexes this young mind but also tends to be disputed among many theologians today. The doctrine of foresight and predestination has been initiated by the word of the apostle Paul who said that God had chosen us in Him before the foundation of the world; and a group of theologians assert that because God has chosen those who would be saved before the foundation of the world, none can be saved but them. But still others assert, based on the word of the apostle John, "Not so. Since God so loved the world, He gave His only Son that whoever believes in Him can be saved. Therefore, the redeemed ones cannot have been fixed since long ago." At this point I would like to say both are right. One may say, "What an absurd answer it is!" But let me have a time to explain it.

There are about 60 students in a school classroom.

The teacher in charge of the class is responsible to choose the best student and give a prize at the end of the year. Then can he not, being in charge of them all year round foresee and predetermine who will win the first prize? It is easy for the teacher who has carefully watched them all the time to foresee and to predetermine who will win the first prize in his heart. And his foresight and predetermination is at least over 95% accurate and at last the one whom he foresaw and predetermined receives the first prize. But there is an exception. If the one whom the teacher foresaw and predetermined unexpectedly deviates from his good conduct in the middle of the year and starts making bad friends to the neglect of study and goes astray, while an unfaithful and mischievous pupil, on the contrary regrets his past and sets his heart to diligent study, and gets the highest grade to deserve the first prize after the evaluation of the final examination, to say again, the one who was foreseen and predetermined by the teacher is left out, and the other who had been so naughty and mischievous got the highest grade as the result of remores and diligent study; then can the teacher say to the one who got the highest grade, "Because you are not the one I foresaw and predetermined, I will not grant you the first prize. I will grant it to him whom I foresaw and predetermined at the beginning of the year even though he got so low grade by his negligence on the way"?



Perhaps there is no such a teacher in the world who judges so unfairly. Likewise, do you think our omniscient Father who knows everything from everlasting to everlasting, the past and present, and the future, cannot foresee His faithful and obedient ones to be saved since a long time ago? Nothing is hidden in His sight. It is His responsibility and right to foresee and predestinate us, for He is our real Father who has begotten and brought us up. None can raise objection to His power. Who has the right to interfere in what He does as He pleases, in begetting and raising His own children or giving them rewards? Parents in this world also bestow large fortune upon the faithful ones while upon profligate ones they give no inheritance but rather, drive them out; and yet no one can interfere with them.

But we have seen in the Bible that people like Balaam the prophet and king Saul whom God had foreseen and predestinated went astray to destruction. On the contrary, ones like the burglar on the cross who had led a degrading and corrupted life in the world repented of their past sins and returned to God and took their places and reward. Therefore I do not believe in the theory that those whom God has foreseen and predestinated from the beginning of the world will be saved at any rate. I believe that even the Gentiles who have not been chosen will inherit eternal life and the kingdom of God if they only, though so late, like the burglar on the cross, return and repent and obey Him.

Therefore I support both assertions that God has chosen those who will be saved since the beginning and that any one who believes in Him shall be saved. And I am certain that both comments of apostle Paul and apostle John in the Bible are genuine truths that no one needs to misunderstand or doubt.

“Though I say to the righteous that he shall surely live, yet if he trusts in his righteousness and commits iniquity, none of his righteous deeds shall be remembered. But in the iniquity that he has committed he shall die. Again, though I say to the wicked, You shall surely die, yet if he turns from his sin and does what is lawful and right... walks in the statutes of life, committing no iniquity; he shall surely live, he shall not die” (Eze. 33:13-15).

“As I live, says the Lord God, I have no pleasure in the death of the wicked, but that the wicked turn from his way and live; turn back, turn back from your evil ways; for why will you die, O house of Israel?” (Eze. 33:11)

Praise the Lord! Glory to our righteous heavenly Father!

a mediator. Let us come boldly to our real Father so tender and loving, who has borne and brought us up, and leap into His bosom and talk to Him with our little lips of our wishes, joys, and delightful experiences. Let us be so happy children in the bosom of our Father.

The intercession of Jesus and the Spirit written in the Bible means that in our family when a little baby learns to call "Mom" and "Daddy," because he cannot speak clearly, mother and brothers intercede for the baby to his daddy. Likewise it means that Jesus and the Holy Spirit speak to the Father for us when "we do not know how to pray as we ought" (Rom. 8:26), not that They were making intercession between a deadly criminal and the king begging for relief on his behalf.

Our Father in heaven, the King of the entire universe declares today to all the inhabitants of the universe— "As for the saints in the land, they are the noble," "they "are My sons," "in whom is all My delight" (Ps. 16:3, 21:7). He also speaks to us, "You are my son... I have begotten you" (Ps. 2:7). "Ask of Me, and I will make the nations your heritage" (Ps. 2:8). "You will call upon Me and come and pray to Me, and I will hear you" (Jer. 29:12). "I will answer you" (Jer. 33:3). "You will call, and the Lord will answer; you shall cry, and He shall say, Here I am" (Isa. 58:9). "Before they call I will answer, while they are yet speaking I will hear" (Isa. 65:24). "You will seek Me and find Me; when you seek Me with all your heart" (Jer. 29:13). And He kindly says to us always, "call upon Me in the day of trouble; I will deliver you and you shall glorify Me" (Ps. 50:15).

Therefore Jesus also said, "Ask, and it will be given you.... For everyone who asks receives" (Matt. 7:7, 8). "Ask in My name; and I do not say to you that I shall pray the Father for you; for the Father Himself loves you" (John 16:26,27). "Every good endowment and every perfect gift is from above, coming down from the Father of lights" (James 1:17). "You do not have, because you do not ask" (James 4:2).

"Any of you, ... let him ask God, who gives to all men generously and without reproaching, and it will be given him" (James 1:5). "He who did not spare His own Son but gave Him up for us all, will He not also give us all things with Him?" (Rom 8:32). "If you then, who are evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father who is in heaven give good things to those who ask him?" (Matt. 7:11). "Therefore I tell you, whatever you ask in prayer, believe that you have received it, and it will be yours" (Mark 11:24).

"Pray to your Father who is in secret" (Matt. 6:6). We may come into God's presence with the confidence that children have in their parents. No man is needed to act as a mediator. In the secret place of prayer, where no eye but God's can see, no ear but His can hear, we may pour out our most hidden desires and longings to the Father of infinite pity, and in the hush and silence of the soul, that voice which never fails to answer the cry of human need will speak to our hearts. "The Lord is very pitiful, and of tender mercy" (James 5:11). He waits with unwearied love to hear

the confessions of the wayward and to accept their penitence. He watches for some return of gratitude from us, as the mother watches for the smile of recognition from her beloved child. He would have us understand how earnestly and tenderly His heart yearns over us. He invites us to take our trials to His sympathy, our sorrows to His Love, our wounds to His healing, our weakness to His strength, our emptiness to His fullness. Never has one been disappointed who came unto Him. "Your Father who sees in secret will reward you" (Matt. 6:6).

Prayer is the opening of the heart to God as to a friend. Our Father waits to bestow upon us the fullness of His blessing. What a wonder it is that we pray so little! God is ready and eager to hear the sincere prayer of the humblest of His children, and yet there is much manifest reluctance on our part to make known our wants to God. What can the angels of heaven think of poor helpless human beings, who are subject to temptation, when God's heart of infinite love yearns toward them, ready to give them more than they can ask or think, and yet they pray so little and have so little faith?

Satan encloses those who neglect to pray. Why should the sons and daughters of God be reluctant to pray, when prayer is the key in the hand of faith to unlock heaven's storehouse, where are treasured the boundless resources (riches, power, wisdom, etc.) of Omnipotence?

Through sincere prayer we are brought into connection with the mind of the Infinite. We may have no remarkable evidence at the time that the face of our Redeemer is bending over us in compassion and love, but this is even so. We may not feel His visible touch, but His hand is upon us in love and pitying tenderness. We should pray in the family circle, and above all we must not neglect secret prayer. Pray in your closet, and as you go about your daily labor let your heart be often uplifted to God. It was thus that Enoch walked with God.

My brethren and sisters! Spread out your wants, your joy, your sorrows, your cares, and your fears before God. You cannot burden or weary Him. He who numbers the hairs of your head is not indifferent to the wants of His children. "The Lord is very pitiful, and of tender mercy" (James 5:11).

His heart of love is touched by our sorrows and even by our utterances of them. Take to Him everything that perplexes the mind. Nothing is too great for Him to bear, for He holds up worlds. He rules over all the affairs of the universe. Nothing that in any way concerns our peace is too small for Him to notice. There is no chapter in our experience too dark for Him to read; there is no perplexity too difficult for Him to unravel.

No calamity can befall the least of His children, no anxiety harass the soul, no joy cheer, no sincere prayer escape the lips, of which our heavenly Father is



unobscured, or in which He takes no immediate interest. "He heals the brokenhearted, and binds up their wounds" (Ps. 147:3). The relations between God and each soul are as distinct and full as though there were not another soul upon the earth to share His watchcare, not another soul for whom He gave His beloved Son.

Jesus says, "You will ask in My name; and I do say to you that I shall pray the Father for you: for the Father Himself loves you" (John 16:26). "I chose you... so that whatever you ask the Father in My name, He may give it to you" (John 15:16). Our God is a tender, merciful Father. His service should not be looked upon as a heart-saddening, distressing exercise. It should be a pleasure to worship the Lord and take part in His work. God would not have His children, for whom so great salvation has been provided, act as if He were a hard, exacting taskmaster. He is their best Friend. Let us with joy come before our Father, with "thanksgiving and the voice of song" (Isa. 51:3).  
Praise the Lord!

## 7. Our Real Father Who Has Forgiven Us of Our Iniquity and Transgression and Sin

"The Lord passed before him, and proclaimed. 'The Lord, the Lord, a God merciful and gracious, slow to anger, and abounding in steadfast love and faithfulness, keeping steadfast love for thousands, forgiving iniquity and transgression and sin, but who will by no means clear the guilty, visiting the iniquity (Ex. 34:6, 7).

Scores of centuries ago, the heavenly Father, the King of kings who so loves and pities His children on earth, has declared a surprising message which makes us doubt our ears. He granted an amnesty to all the sinners on earth who were doomed to death by transgression and were trembling with fear, waiting hopelessly for the day of execution. This message was the best news that had ever been heard by all condemned criminals who were helplessly waiting for the day of execution and living in despair in the bar-less prison of earth. The general amnesty itself meant their lives. But in spite of the fact that their acquittal had been already declared, which should fill all the earthprison with joyful exclamations and shouts of exultation, it was rather strange and even more surprising to see that none of them would attempt to take off their filthy garments and run out of the prison to enjoy the already

newly endowed life of glory and liberty freely, although thousands of years have passed since the amnesty has been declared.

Consequently, in the prison of earth was a perpetuation of the same past dark and miserable life amid oppressive silence without any response to the joyful message. What is all this about? What is the reason? It was found that the first reason is that most of the criminals did not hear the message as they themselves claim, and the second is that although a few heard it, they did not understand what it implied. That is why this glorious and joyful message of tidings contributed nothing to anyone in the immense prison of earth. What a heart-breaking, sorrowful reality it is! Notwithstanding their acquittal was already declared thousands of years ago, they did not hear it? Or couldn't understand it even after hearing it? O what a sad story it is that they all have died in the prison for generations, transferring their prison garments from father to son, and from son to grandson, and from generation to next generation! Now we can fully understand the heart of our heavenly Father who sent the message—"My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge" (Hosea 4: 6). This sigh means, "My people are dying away in earthprison without bars because they do not know."

(1) I Forgive "Iniquity and Transgression and Sin" (Ex. 34:7).

In this hour let us learn what the amnesty (declaration of their acquittal) meant, and why most of the criminals on earth did not understand it.

"The Lord... proclaimed, the Lord, The Lord God, merciful and gracious, longsuffering, and abundant in goodness and truth, keeping mercy for thousands, forgiving iniquity and transgression and sin" (Ex. 34:6-7, K.J.V.). It means, I the Lord, the King of the universe proclaim, I am the Lord: I am merciful, and gracious, and longsuffering, who hate to punish. Therefore I proclaim to all prisoners under heaven, enjoy your freedom and live happily and freely from now on since I have forgiven your "iniquity and transgression and sin" (Ex. 34:7).

Our merciful Father proclaimed that He had forgiven our iniquity and transgression and sin: then what are the nature of these three sins that confined us so miserably? and what makes us enjoy so complete liberty as we are freed from them? Let us learn one by one now.

(1) Iniquity... This is what sinful David sighed about, when he said, "Behold, I was brought forth in iniquity" (Ps. 51:5), and which is what we were born with from mother's womb, our evil inclinations we are helpless to change. This is the root of our evil inclination, which has been so strongly extended out for 6

thousand years, that we are helpless to be freed from it. It is an evil trait that a sinner can neither overcome nor change, as God said in the Bible, "Can the Ethiopian change his skin or the leopard its spots? Neither can you do good who are accustomed to doing evil" (Jer. 13:23, N.I.V.). Our merciful God proclaimed that he would change it for us Himself.

(2) Transgression... This is like a sin committed not on purpose but by a momentary mistake by a converted soul who longs and strives to live according to the will of God, as the apostle Paul spoke, "Wretched man that I am!" "I can will what is right, but I cannot do it. I do not do the good I want, but the evil I do not want is what I do" (Rom. 7:24, 7:18, 19). For instance, it is likened to the guilt of an accidental homicide committed by a mistake of a fine driver.

Our heavenly Father proclaimed that He would understand all these mistakes and forgive them completely.

(3) Sin... This is the worst evil out of three, like that which David committed when he killed an innocent man Uriah under elaborate plan to take Bathsheba his wife. But as He has forgiven dreadfully sinful David when he returned in heartbreaking repentance, He proclaimed that He had already forgiven all our sins that we would commit intentionally.

"Come, let us reason together, says the Lord: though your sins are like scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they are red like crimson, they shall become like wool" (Isa. 1:18).

"I, I am He who blots out your transgressions for My own sake, and I will not remember your sins" (Isa. 43:25).

"I have swept away your transgressions like a cloud, and your sins like mist: return to Me, for I have redeemed you" (Isa. 44:22).

Now, besides the three evils--that with which we were born, and that which we have committed by mistake during our lifetime, and that which we have committed intentionally with no sense of shame, can you search out any more unpardoned evil in you? Brethren and sisters! Your Father in heaven who has begotten and brought you up with great love has been exclaiming since several scores of centuries ago, and again and again earnestly that He had already forgiven all your sins through the blood of Jesus His Son. "I have swept away your transgressions, ... return to Me, for I have redeemed you" (Isa. 44:22). He has been shouting, "I have freed you from the chain of death; therefore live happily forever in freedom and peace."

"Who is a God like Thee, pardoning iniquity and passing over transgression for the remnant of His inheritance? He does not retain His anger forever because He delights in steadfast love. He will again have compassion upon us. He will tread our iniquities under foot. Thou wilt cast all our sins into the depths of the sea" (Micah 7:18, 19).

"Sing, O heavens, for the Lord has done it; Shout, O depths of the earth; break forth into singing. O



mountains, O forest! ... For the Lord has redeemed  
(Isa. 44:23).

“What then shall we say to this? If God is for us, who is against us?... Who shall bring any charge against God's elect? It is God who justifies: who is to condemn?... I am sure that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor things present, nor things to come, nor powers, nor heights, nor death, nor anything else in all creation will be able to separate us from the love of God in Christ Jesus our Lord” (Rom. 8:31-39).

(2) He “Will by No Means Clear the Guilty” but Visit.  
(Ex. 34:7)

Our grateful Father has cast out our iniquity and transgression and sin into the depths of the sea. Then what does He mean when He says He “will by no means clear the guilty” but visit? Perhaps there must be some other kind of evil that cannot be forgiven. What are these unpardonable sins and how many would they be? Let us take a time to find the answers.

Confucius who was once referred to as the Saint of the East classified all evils committed by men into three thousand categories. Then how many do you think are numbered by our heavenly Father? How many will they be in the sight of God? Let us direct our attention to His voice: “Says the Lord, My people have committed two evils: (1) they have forsaken Me, the fountain of living waters, and (2) hewed out cisterns

for themselves, broken cisterns, that can hold no water” (Jer. 2:13). In the sight of our real Father who has removed all our iniquity and transgression and sin, there are found only two evils.

First is that we have forsaken and departed from God the Source of life, and second is that we have striven to live by ourselves apart from God the Source of life, which implies the same as the first. Consequently in the sight of God there is only one kind of evil, that is to forsake and depart from our heavenly Father who is the source of eternal life.

The Bible refers to this kind of sinner as whom God “will by no means clear his guilt” (Ex. 34:7) but visit for sure. Then is our God one who kills and retaliate all His children on earth who depart from Him? I feel sad when I see many people misunderstand here.

Our heavenly Father who so loved His sinful children on earth and gave up His only Son for us, came down with Him, to share agony with Him on Calvary, and His heart was pierced. He wept hugging the dead body of His Son who had died for the sin of the world. Can He be the wicked God who kills and destroys mercilessly those children who forsake and depart from Him? No, never. On the contrary, He has greater pity and compassion on them than those who have returned to Him, and He always remembers and yearns after them in love and tenderness. Then why does the Bible describe the sinner who commits this sin unpardonable? That is well illustrated in the parable of the

vine. As the branch dries up under the sun when it is separated from the vine, so do the earthly children die away exhausted of living water (life) when they forsake and depart from the Father who is the fountain of living water. Jesus prophesied that the soul-branches that departed from God and dried up would be thrown into fire at the end, saying, "The branches are gathered and thrown into the fire and burned" (John 15:6). They are whom God represented as guilty that could not be forgiven but surely visited (Exodus 34:7).

Concerning this unpardonable evil, Matthew, one of the disciples, testified that it is "the blasphemy against the Spirit" and it "will not be forgiven either in this age or in the age to come" (Matt. 12:31,32). This testimony is true and right; only in the hands of our Father are the living water of the Holy Spirit and the precious blood of Jesus. Our heavenly Father is running after His sinful children of earth holding the living water of the Holy Spirit on one hand and the precious blood of Jesus His Son on the other hand, but they run away all the more strongly; and how can they find a drop of sin-cleansing blood that can wash them clean, or the living water of the Holy Spirit that will quench their thirst either in this world or in the world to come when they left behind the Father only with whom has their living water and cleansing blood? Wandering around endlessly in the vast desert, they fall exhausted and die dried up. Therefore "The blasphemy against the Spirit..." that "will not be

forgiven, either in this age or in the age to come" (Matt. 12:31,32), does not mean that our Father of infinite love and mercy does not forgive, but cannot forgive.

Before the love of our Father greater and broader than the universe, and before the sea of the precious blood of Jesus our Brother that is surging with greater majesty than the Pacific Ocean, can there be found any sin too great to be washed? Not one. If there is any, it is only because one runs away himself from the tender care of the Father and the precious blood of Jesus, and without pardon he only becomes perishable. This is the natural consequence of his own deed like reaping the harvest of his own sowing. He "will by no means clear the guilty," but visit. (Ex. 34:7).

<What is the Blasphemy Against the Holy Spirit (Matt. 12:31,32)? >

Since we drew out the subject, let us find more about the blasphemy against the Holy Spirit before we close this section.

Jesus told us, "It is the spirit (the Holy Spirit) that gives life.... the words (the Bible) that I have spoken to you are spirit (the Holy Spirit)" (John 6:63), and "the word of God is living and active, sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing to the division of soul and spirit, of joints and marrow, and discerning the thoughts and intentions of the heart" (Heb. 4:12). That is the Holy Spirit. He also added, "You are gods.... to whom the word of God came, (and the Scripture cannot be broken)" (John 10:35).

Moses was a man just like us, but he became a god (Ex. 4:16, 7:1), because he received the word that came out of the mouth of God (the Spirit of God).

The Holy Spirit is the Author of the entire 66 books in the Bible. He abides in the Bible: the word of the Bible itself is the Holy Spirit. Therefore the blasphemy against the Spirit means to defy and reject the word of God in the Bible. This is the dreadful sin of "blasphemy against the Spirit" that "will not be forgiven either in this age, or in the age to come" (Matt. 12:31,32).

We know quite well that the reason why the king Saul the greatly favored of God, the leader of His people was forsaken and perished by horrible death was no other sin (iniquity or transgression or sin) but the blasphemy against the Holy Spirit, that is, the disobedience to the word of God (the Bible).

"And Samuel said to Saul.... 'For you have rejected the word of the Lord, the Lord has rejected you from being king of Israel'" (1 Sam. 15:26).

Jesus said, "Every one then who hears these words of mine (the Bible) and does them will be like a wise man who built his house upon the rock, and the rain fell, and the floods came, and the winds blew and beat upon that house, but it did not fall, because it had been founded on the rock. And every one who hears these words of mine (the Bible) and does not do them will be like a foolish man who built his house upon the sand; and the rain fell, and the floods came, and the winds blew and beat against that house, and it fell; and great was the fall of it" (Matt. 7:24-27). "I warn every one who hears the words of the prophecy of this book; if anyone adds to them (the words of the Bible), God will add to him the plagues described in this book, and if any one takes away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God will take away his share in the tree of life and in the holy city, which are described in this book." "He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches" (Rev. 22:18,19, 2:7).



Because the words of the Bible that proceeded from the mouth of God the Father, and of the Son, and of the Spirit are "spirit and life" (John 6:63), the everlasting life, Jesus also said, "You search the Scriptures, because you think that in them you have eternal life" (John 5:39). "Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceeds from the mouth of God" (Matt. 4:4).

Therefore the "two evils" that "they have forsaken Me" (Jer. 2:13) means to abandon the Bible or to disobey it although they have it. In the Bible abide God the Father, Jesus the Saviour, and the Holy Spirit, the living water for perishing souls. In the Bible are found the guarantee of pardon, cleansing blood, heavenly kingdom, eternal life, living water, and the fruit of life, and abound more than 3700 promises and rewards. All of these promises and rewards are not granted to those who listen and obey only one or two phrases or some parts of the Bible, but to those who obey "every word" (Matt. 4:4) of God in the Old and the New Testaments.

Dear brethren and sisters! Your real Father in heaven who has forgiven the tremendous evils of your life—your iniquity and transgression and sin—asks you for only one thing, to obey and follow the Bible; for it is His earnest desire who so loves us, to give us eternal life and every reward that is promised in the Bible. "My son, do not forget my teaching, but let your

heart keep my commandments" (Pro. 3:1). "Do not add to His words, lest He rebuke you, and you be found a liar" (Pro. 30:6). "You shall not add to the word which I command you, nor take from it" (Deut. 4:2).

"To the law and to the testimony! If they do not speak according to this word, they have no light of dawn" (Isa. 8:20, N.I.V.).

"Behold, to obey is better than sacrifice, and to hearken than the fat of rams. For rebellion is as the sin of divination, and stubbornness is as iniquity and idolatry" (1 Sam. 15:22,23).

"My son, keep my words, and treasure up my commandments with you: keep my commandments and live, keep the teaching as the apple of your eye; bind them on your fingers, write them on the tablet of your heart" (Pro. 3:1-3).

## 8. Our Real Father Who Personally Heals All Our Diseases

There are innumerable children of God on earth. Today they are almost 5 billions in number. But we see there are just a few among all of them who know and genuinely appreciate the heavenly Father's love and grace. For example, many of His children get sick and groan every day and also many of them get well everyday. There are of course some who die of old age. But there are none among the healed who did not receive the touch of His curing work.

Among all sorts of medicines that doctors or physicians prescribe, not a single drug is made of ingredients that are not given by God. Their hands and minds and even the knives held in their hands are all given to us by God for nothing.

"God who made the world and everything in it... who gives to all men life and breath" (Acts 17:24,25), hands and feet, and wisdom in heart now speaks to us. "Gird up your loins like a man, I will question you, and you shall declare to Me. Where were you when I laid the foundation of the earth? Tell me, if you have understanding" (Job. 38:3,4). "Who endowed the heart with wisdom or gave understanding to the mind?" (Job. 38:36, N.I.V.). "What have you that you did not receive? If then you received it, why do you boast as if it were not a gift?" (1 Cor. 4:7).

"Thus says the Lord: Let not the wise man glory in his wisdom, let not the mighty men glory in his might, let not the rich man glory in his riches; but let him who glories glory in this, that he understands and knows Me, that I am the Lord who practice steadfast love, justice, and righteousness in the earth; for in these things I delight, says the Lord" (Jer. 9:23,24).

A doctor in the hospital performs a surgical operation on his patients with his knowledge and skill, and puts stitches in the wounds, and applies remedies on them. And then there is nothing more he can do for the patients. This is the boundary of human faculty. From then on God's hand does all the works. He heals up fractured bones and makes them strong, binds up bloodshedding wounds so perfectly that not a drop of water can soak into the healed skin, relieves sharp pains and restores the skin as perfectly as original. This is the everyday work of the Heavenly Physician.

And some of the cured patients give thanks and praise to Jesus and the Holy Spirit for so abundant grace. But there are few who give sincere thanks to the Father. Of course Jesus and the Holy Spirit heal our diseases. But I, in this section, would like to praise highly about the healing power of God the Father.

People, with one accord, speak much about the power of Jesus that healed all the sick on earth two thousand years ago. But the Bible, "the two witnesses" who stand by the Lord of the whole earth" (Zech. 4:14, Rev. 11:3), testifies that most of the power to heal

the sick and to raise the dead that Jesus exercised was the power of the Father and His hands.

It is written, "Is any among you sick? Let him... pray" (James 5:14). "As a father pities his children, so the Lord pities those who fear Him" (Ps. 103:13).

"Mighty works and wonders and signs... God did through Him (Jesus) in your midst, as you yourselves know" (Acts 2:22). With the power of God "He (Jesus) went about doing good and healing all that were oppressed by the devil, for God was with Him" (Acts 10:38). "And He went about all Galilee... healing... every infirmity among the people... And they brought Him all the sick, those afflicted with various diseases and pains, demoniacs, epileptics, and paralytics, and He healed them" (Matt. 4:23,24). And Jesus said, "When ye have lifted up the Son of man, then shall ye know... that I do nothing of Myself; but... My Father" (John 8:28).

"I am in the Father, and the Father in Me... does His works. Believe Me that I am in the Father and the Father in Me; or else believe Me for the sake of the works themselves"—healing the sick and mighty works and wonders. "By Myself I can do nothing" (John 14:10,11, 5:30, N.I.V.). "The mighty works that I did in healing the sick, raising the dead, and making the sea calm was not what I, a man Jesus, did, but the Father." Yes, As He had been a true God before He came to the earth, so was He a true human, Jesus of Nazareth, a son of a carpenter. Therefore the man

Jesus did not and could not raise up the dead, remove the maladies that were afflicting His children, and rebuke and calm the sea. The mighty works and powers that Jesus did was the power of Almighty God the Father who was in Him: He Himself in His Son did all the works. That is why Jesus said, "Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of Himself" (John 5:19, K.J.V.). "My Father is working still, and I am working" (John 5:17). "He is kind unto the unthankful and to the evil" (Luke 6:35, K.J.V.).

Truly it was God the Father who came in the man Jesus of Nazareth two thousand years ago that laid hands on the poor, pitiful children, who were rejected, forsaken and left comfortless. He healed them all, especially visiting the needy from village to village, from city to city, and from town to town.

O what an amazing love of the Father for the world! So unbelievably wonderful is the love that caused Him, the Majesty of heaven, King of the universe to come down to this cursed ground, to visit every poor home to lay His hands on His afflicted children, and heal them. This amazing fact the world has not known, and it is also a hidden mystery today.

But the Bible shows that the disciples who had been taught by Jesus about the Father's healing of love for His children and witnessed all these healings that the Father had performed through His Son, prayed after His ascension not to Jesus or to the Spirit, but to the Father to ask for His grace and help heal the sick.



“They lifted their voices together to God and said, ‘Sovereign Lord... stretch out Thy hand to heal, (that) signs and wonders be performed through the name of Thy holy servant Jesus’” (Acts 4:24,30). And the God of infinite love answered to their prayer. “And when they had prayed, the place in which they were gathered together was shaken; and they were all filled with the Holy Spirit” (Acts 4:31), and went about to heal all the sick. Once on the way to the temple, Peter and John saw “a man lame from birth” (Acts 3:2) and healed him. “And all the people... were filled with wonder and amazement at what had happened to him” (Acts 3:9,10). And seeing them glorify the disciples and not God, Peter exclaimed, “Men of Israel, why do you wonder at this, or why do you stare at us, as though by our own power or piety we had made him walk? The God of Abraham and of Isaac and of Jacob, the God of our fathers, “by healing this man in the name of Jesus, “glorified his servant Jesus” (Acts 3:12,13). Truly our real Father in heaven healed us Himself two thousand years ago in His Son and in the disciples and is also healing us today in the hospitals and homes. “But they did not know that I healed them.” (Hosea 11:3).

How many, among all the children of God in this world, are there who appreciate and praise Him for His grace and love, for curing and delivering them from their painful diseases and caring for them all the time? Surprisingly, there are very few. How sad the angels

must be at the sight! There are many among the healed who feel grateful to Jesus. But it seems that there are almost none who give sincere thanks to the Father who deserves to receive greater gratitude from His children. How lonely and deserted He must feel when He sees no response of love and thanks from us! But without a bit of a look of complaint or displeasure He still lays His healing hand of love upon you and me today and cares us with steadfast love and tenderness. He continues to say to us, “I am the Lord, your Healer” (Ex. 15:26).

Dear brethren and sisters! Although it is late, let us now give thanks to our heavenly Father.

“Praise the Lord! For it is good to sing praises to our God... He heals the brokenhearted, and binds up their wounds” (Ps. 147:1-3). “Bless the Lord, O my soul, and forget not all His benefits, who heals all your diseases, who redeems your life from the Pit, who crowns you with steadfast love and mercy, who satisfies you with good as long as you live so that your youth is renewed like the eagle’s” (Ps. 103:2-5). “O give thanks unto the Lord; for He is good; for His mercy endures forever. O give thanks unto the God of heaven; for His mercy endures forever” (Ps. 136:1,26), for He is our real Father who heals all our diseases. Praise the Lord!

## 9. Our Real Father Who Is Working Diligently for Each of His Children

### (1) Our Heavenly Father Who Works Diligently

Most of my brethren in the world seem to think that our heavenly Father is a God who does nothing Himself but is in a state of idle inactivity and requires of all the angels and men to glorify, praise and pay reverence to Him sitting on the throne. He is also looked upon as a stern judge searching for the faults and wrongdoings of the sinners to punish them like a harsh and mean tyrant. But this is the most grievous misunderstanding and perversion.

Let us listen to the testimony of our Eldest Brother, Jesus Christ, the very Son of God who has been with Him from eternity and from the beginning of the foundation of the earth.

It is written, "The Lord" started "His works of old" "in the beginning of His way" "before He had made the earth with its fields, or the first of the dust of the world. When He established the heavens, I was there, when He drew a circle on the face of the deep, when He made firm the skies above, when He established the foundations of the deep, when He assigned to the sea its limit, so that the waters might not transgress His command, when He marked out the fountains of the earth, then I was beside Him, like a master workman," helping Him "and I was daily His delight,

rejoicing before Him always" (Pro. 8:22, 26-30).

"My Father is working still, and I am working." "Truly, truly, I say to you, the Son can do nothing of His own accord, but only what He sees the Father doing; for whatever He does, that the Son does likewise" (John 5:17,19). "I can do nothing of Myself" (John 5:30, K.J.V.).

Truly our heavenly Father has been working diligently for all His children in the universe since the beginning of the world and will not cease His work and service forever. But He never becomes tired nor weary. "Have you not known? Have you not heard? The Lord is everlasting God, the Creator of the ends of the earth. He does not faint or grow weary, His understanding is unsearchable. He gives power to the faint, and to him who has no might He increases strength" (Isa. 40:28, 29). "I am the Lord your God, who stirs up the sea so that its waves roar—the Lord of hosts is His name" (Isa. 51:5).

### (2) Our Heavenly Father Who Supplies the Needs of All His Creatures

Jesus tells us concretely about the works of His Father in detail.—"Look at the birds of the air; they neither sow nor reap nor gather into barns, and yet your heavenly Father feeds them.... And consider the lilies of the field, how they grow; they neither toil nor spin; yet I tell you, even Solomon in all his glory was not

Compare with Job 38:1-41:26 and Psalms 104:1-35:10.

arrayed like one of these;'' for He clothed them so beautiful... ''God so clothes the grass of the field, which today is alive, and tomorrow is thrown into the oven'' (Matt. 6:26, 28-30). Moreover, ''who provides for the raven its prey, when its young ones cry to God, and wander about'' in the sky ''for lack of food?'' Your Father, your heavenly Father feeds them (Job 38:41).

''Can you hunt the prey for the lion, or satisfy the appetites of the young lions? When they crouch in their dens'' in hunger, your Father also feeds them (Job 38:39, 40).

''He covers the heavens with clouds, He prepares rain for the earth, He makes grass grow upon the hills'' (Ps. 147:8). And He ''causes the grass to grow for the cattle, and plants for man to cultivate'' (Ps. 104:14).

And ''the sea, great and wide, which teems with... innumerable living things both small and great... These all look to Thee... When Thou givest to them, they gather it up. When Thou openest Thy hand, they are filled with good things'' (Ps. 104:25-28).

''Pray then like this: Our Father in heaven... Give us today our daily bread'' And He will give ''all men generously and without reproaching'' (Matt. 6:9-13, N.I.V., James 1:5). ''The eyes of all look to Thee, and Thou givest them their food in due season. Thou openest Thine hand, Thou satisfiest the desire of every living thing'' (Ps. 145:15,16).

''O Lord, how manifold are Thy works!'' (Ps. 104:24)  
No one can count or number them.

(3) Our Real Father Who Takes Unceasing Care of Us

''Jesus said, 'Peace be with you'' (John 20:21).

''Are not sparrows sold for a penny? And not one of them will fall to the ground without your Father's will. But even the hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear not, therefore; you are of more value than many sparrows'' (Matt. 10:29-31).

''If God clothes the grass of the field'' with so tender love ''which today is alive and tomorrow is thrown into the oven, will He not much more clothe you'' whom He has begotten and brought up with so great love? (Matt. 6:30) ''O men of little faith!... Do not seek what you are to eat and what you are to drink, nor be of anxious mind. For all the nations of the world seek these things; and your Father knows that you need them, '' and provides them to you (Luke 12:8-30).

''But seek first His kingdom and His righteousness, and all these things (food, clothing, house, treasures) shall be yours as well'' (Matt. 6:33).

''Do not love the world or the things in the world. If anyone loves the world, love for the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh and the lust of the eyes and the pride of life, is not of the Father but is of the world. And'' after a little while ''the world passes away, and the lust of it; but he who does the will of God abides forever'' (1 John 2:15-17). Therefore ''if we have food and clothing with these we shall be content'' (1 Tim. 6:8).



arrayed like one of these." for He clothed them so beautiful... "God so clothes the grass of the field, which today is alive, and tomorrow is thrown into the oven" (Matt. 6:26, 28-30). Moreover, "who provides for the raven its prey, when its young ones cry to God, and wander about" in the sky "for lack of food?" Your Father, your heavenly Father feeds them (Job 38:41).

"Can you hunt the prey for the lion, or satisfy the appetites of the young lions? When they crouch in their dens" in hunger, your Father also feeds them (Job 38:39, 40).

"He covers the heavens with clouds, He prepares rain for the earth, He makes grass grow upon the hills" (Ps. 147:8). And He "causes the grass to grow for the cattle, and plants for man to cultivate" (Ps. 104:14).

And "the sea, great and wide, which teems with... innumerable living things both small and great... These all look to Thee... When Thou givest to them, they gather it up, When Thou openest Thy hand, they are filled with good things" (Ps. 104:25-28).

"Pray then like this: Our Father in heaven... Give us today our daily bread." And He will give "all men generously and without reproaching" (Matt. 6:9-13, N.I.V., James 1:5). "The eyes of all look to Thee, and Thou givest them their food in due season, Thou openest Thine hand, Thou satisfiest the desire of every living thing" (Ps. 145:15,16).

"O Lord, how manifold are Thy works!" (Ps. 104:24) No one can count or number them.

(3) Our Real Father Who Takes Unceasing Care of Us  
"Jesus said, 'Peace be with you'" (John 20:21).

"Are not sparrows sold for a penny? And not one of them will fall to the ground without your Father's will. But even the hairs of your head are all numbered, Fear not, therefore; you are of more value than many sparrows" (Matt. 10:29-31).

"If God clothes the grass of the field" with so tender love "which today is alive and tomorrow is thrown into the oven, will He not much more clothe you" whom He has begotten and brought up with so great love? (Matt. 6:30) "O men of little faith!... Do not seek what you are to eat and what you are to drink, nor be of anxious mind. For all the nations of the world seek these things; and your Father knows that you need them," and provides them to you (Luke 12:8-30).

"But seek first His kingdom and His righteousness, and all these things (food, clothing, house, treasures) shall be yours as well" (Matt. 6:33).

"Do not love the world or the things in the world. If anyone loves the world, love for the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh and the lust of the eyes and the pride of life, is not of the Father but is of the world. And" after a little while "the world passes away, and the lust of it; but he who does the will of God abides forever" (1 John 2:15-17). Therefore "if we have food and clothing with these we shall be content" (1 Tim. 6:8).

“As a father pities his children, so the Lord pities those who fear Him. . . . As one whom his mother” of his flesh “comforts, so” He “will comfort you.” He will “satisfy you with good as long as you live so that your youth is renewed like the eagle’s.” (Ps. 103:13, Isa. 66:13, Ps. 103:3,5).

“He is not far from each one of us, for in Him we live and move and have our being; . . . indeed we are His offspring” (Acts 17:27,28).

Our Father in heaven is the source of life, of wisdom, and of joy. Look at the wonderful and beautiful things of nature. Think of their marvelous adaptation to the needs and happiness, not only of man, but of all living creatures. The sunshine and the rain, that gladden and refresh the earth, the hills and seas and plains, all speak to us of the love of the Creator, our heavenly Father. It is God who supplies the daily needs of all His creatures.

“God is love” is written upon every opening bud, upon every spire of springing grass. The lovely birds making the air vocal with their happy songs, the delicately tinted flowers in their perfection perfuming the air, the lofty trees of the forest with their rich foliage of living green—all testify to the tender, fatherly care of our God and to His desire to make His children happy.

Moreover His power is revealed on the pulsation of the heart, on the movement of the lungs, and on the thousands of bloodvessels that circulate every organ of

the whole body. Every passing moment of our existence we owe to Him our well-being. He takes care of us with greater pity than that of a mother hugging her baby, groaning in sickness. His heart of love is touched by our sorrows and even by our utterances of them.

Not a sigh is breathed out of our mouth, not a pain felt, not a grief pierces our souls, but the throb vibrates to His heart.

There is no other such faithful, devoted, loving, and kind head of a family as our heavenly Father in the world. He is also the most tender Caretaker as a head of our universal family.

Unlimited is His love for us. “But Zion said, The Lord has forsaken me, my Lord has forgotten me. Can a woman forget her sucking child, that she should have no compassion on the son of her womb? Even these may forget, yet I will not forget you. Behold, I have graven you on the palms of My hands; your walls are continually before Me” (Isa. 49:14-16).

“You whom I have upheld since you were conceived, and have carried since your birth, Even to your old age and gray hairs I am He, I am He who will sustain you. I have made you and I will carry you; I will sustain you and I will rescue you” (Isa. 46:3,4).

Praise the Lord! Glory to our Father who takes unceasing care of us!  
Praise the Lord!

## 10. Our Real Father Who Gives His Holy Spirit to Us Sinners

As I go to new areas of missionary work I frequently ask the believers this question. — "Dear friends! God has promised to pour His Holy Spirit upon us: then will He give it to the pure and holy and blameless, ones or to the wicked, filthy, abominable sinners?" And most of them reply with one voice, "Of course to the pure and holy and blameless ones."

As I hear such replies from my fellow believers, I feel much sorry. And the talk leads us to open the Bible.

"Let us learn from the Bible now whether He has truly spoken that He would give it to the good and blameless. Let's open Luke chapter 11." I suggest. And we have a period of interesting Bible study.

In Luke chapter 11 Jesus said, "What father among you, if his son asks for a fish, will instead of a fish give him a serpent: or if he asks for an egg, will give him a scorpion? ... How much more will the heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to those who ask Him!" (Luke 11:11-13). "And be not worried, therefore, ask, and it will be given you: seek and you will find: knock, and it will be opened to you. For everyone who asks receives, and he who seeks finds, and to him who knocks it will be opened" (Luke 11:9,10).

To whom did He say "Ask, and it will be given you"? Let's look it up again in detail.

"You then who are evil... the heavenly Father gives the Holy Spirit to those who ask Him" (Luke 11:13). We are assured that He has promised to give His Spirit to the evil. Yes, it is true. When the Holy Spirit, the third God, comes to a sinner by grace, he finds himself a sinner and is led to repent of his past sins, and then his life becomes pure, born again, and becomes at last a blameless sanctified man.

One the contrary, if a sinner attempts to make himself pure and good enough to receive the Spirit before he comes to God first to receive it, he will never become good enough to receive it, nor have the opportunity for it. It is also an absurd and presumptuous sin.

"My people have committed two evils; they have forsaken Me, the Fountain of living waters (Holy Spirit), and hewed out cisterns, that can hold no water (Holy Spirit)" (Jer. 2:13). Toward these people God says,

"You fool!" "Can the Ethiopian change his skin or the leopard its spots" by themselves? "Neither can you do good," without the help of the Holy Spirit. "who are accustomed to doing evil" (Luke 12:20, Jer. 13:23, N.I.V.).

"You shallow men, ... neither say" you "in" your "heart, 'Let us now fear the Lord our God, that giveth rain, both the former and the latter in His season' ... Your iniquities have turned away these things and your sins have withholden good things (the Spirit of them former and latter rain) from you, ... Therefore the



showers have been withholden, and there hath been no latter rain; and thou hadst a whore's forehead, thou refusedst to be ashamed" (James 2:20, Jer. 5:24,25, K.J.V., Jer. 3:3, K.J.V.). They at last become like those who have lost forever the opportunity to be saved and cry, "The harvest is past, the summer is ended, and we are not saved" (Jer. 8:20). But while they were spending time foolishly in striving to make themselves pure and holy enough to receive the Holy Spirit, God was also earnestly waiting for them to come to Him to receive the Spirit, allowing them time and opportunities with perseverance; but they persistently would not come to Him to receive it.

Therefore He says, "I will scatter you like chaff driven by the wind from the desert." "This is your lot, the portion I have measured out to you, says the Lord, because you have forgotten Me and trusted in 'your own 'lies'" (Jer. 13:24,25).

"If you say in your heart, 'Why have these things come upon me,' It is for the greatness of your iniquity" (Jer. 13:22). "Woe to you, O Jerusalem! How long will it be before you are made clean?" (Jer. 13:27).

★The greatest sin of those who profess to be Christians is that they neither seek the Holy Spirit nor open their hearts to receive it. Desires for goodness and holiness are good as far as they go; but if you stop here, and do not seek the Holy Spirit, they will avail nothing. Many will perish while only hoping and desiring to be true Christians.

"Now there was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews" (John 3:1). He was truly a man who endeavored to keep the laws, to live a pure, holy, pious life, and to be a sanctified man all by himself. But contrary to his striving and endeavor his life was a succession of bitter disappointment and distress and disillusion resulting from continual atrophy and failure.

At last he determined to meet Jesus of whom he had heard by rumors. As he came to Him one night he did not expose his miserable state before Him and said with concealed heart, "Rabbi, we know that you are a teacher come from God; for no one can do these signs that you do, unless God is with him" (John 3:2). But He who clearly knew his miserable state and sympathized with his agony did not respond to his meaningless speech, but gave him the very answer to the cry from the deep of his heart—"Lord! What should I do to be sanctified, and to join the holy people of God's kingdom?" He answered, "Verily, verily I say unto you, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God" (John 3:3, K.J.V.).

To say it again, "Truly I teach you aright: unless one first receives from God His Holy Spirit to be born again by it, and becomes a regenerate man by receiving a new life from above, he cannot see the kingdom of God." But he failed to comprehend Jesus' words, and retorted with an absurd question unworthy of a well-informed Jewish ruler, "Nicodemus said to him, 'How

can a man be born when he is old? Can he enter a second time into his mother's womb and be born? ... (John 3:4). And He taught him again more particularly, "Jesus answered, 'Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born of... the Spirit, he cannot enter the kingdom of God'" (John 3:5). That is, "Truly I teach you again: unless a sinner receives from God His Holy Spirit to be transformed into holiness by its power, and becomes born again, all his efforts to become sanctified by himself and to enter heaven will avail nothing and prove impossible."

Therefore from that hour this struggling soul settled all hidden problems after one interview with Jesus, became one of His most faithful disciples, who from then on began to live a regenerated life by submitting to the leading of the Holy Spirit; and after His crucifixion, although all other disciples had forsaken Him and run away, he alone "brought a mixture of myrrh and aloes about a hundred pounds' weight" (John 19:39) and bravely received Him with sorrow at His death.

Many today "lust for" the Spirit, "and have not; ye kill, and desire to have, and cannot obtain;... ye have not, because ye ask not. Ye ask, and receive not, because ye ask amiss, that ye may consume it upon your lusts" (James 4:2,3, K.J.V.).

★ Truly, the Spirit does not come by force or compulsion like the evil spirit into the hearts of those who neither feel need nor seek for it. It is so pure as

a dove that it only comes to those who invite it with kindness; it is not given in answer to the prayers of those who seek it to use it for <sup>practical</sup> orientation and selfish purpose. It is given to those who are willing to obey it with the humility of a child.

Today Jesus is exclaiming to the humble. Jesus stood up and proclaimed, "If any one thirst, let him come to Me and drink. He who believes in Me, as the Scripture has said, 'Out of his heart shall flow rivers of living water'" (John 7:37,38). "Now this He said about the Spirit, which those who believed in Him were to receive" (John 7:39).

Isaiah exclaims too, "Every one who thirsts, come to the waters (Holy Spirit); and he who has no money, come, buy and eat... without money and without price" (Isa. 55:1).

Peter exclaims too, "Peter said to them, ... 'Every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ... shall receive the gift of the Holy Spirit. For the promise is to you and to your children and to all that are far off, every one whom the Lord our God calls to Him'" (Acts 2:38,39).

The apostle Paul exclaims too, "When the goodness and lovingkindness of God our Saviour appeared, He saved us, not because of deeds done by us in righteousness, but in virtue of His own mercy, by the... renewal in the Holy Spirit, which He poured out upon us richly through Jesus Christ our Saviour, so that we might be justified by His (the Holy Spirit's) grace and

become heirs in hope of eternal life" (Titus 3:4-7).

✠The Holy Spirit itself exclaims, "The Spirit and the Bride say, 'Come'. And let him who hears say, 'Come'. And let him who is thirsty come, let him who desires take the water of life without price." "Those who are well have no need of a physician, but those who are sick.... For I came not to call the righteous, but sinners" who are not sanctified yet (Rev. 22:17, Matt. 9:12, 13).

✠Our heavenly Father is more willing to give the Holy Spirit to those who serve Him than parents are to give good gifts to their children. When the Spirit of God takes possession of the heart, it transforms the life. If all were willing all would be filled with the Spirit, and have the experience of regeneration and attain to the state of sanctification.

"As the body apart from the spirit is dead," "if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of His (James 2:26, Rom. 8:9, K. J. V.) ✠The promise of the Holy Spirit is not limited to any age or to any race, Christ declared that the divine influence of His Spirit was to be with His followers unto the end of the world. From the day of Pentecost to the present time, the Comforter has been sent to all who have yielded themselves fully to the Lord and to His service. The lapse of time has wrought no change in Christ's parting promise to send the Holy Spirit as His representative. It is not because of any restriction on the part of God that the riches of His grace do not flow earthward to men. If the fulfil-

ment is not seen as it might be, it is because the promise is not appreciated as it should be. If all were willing, all would be filled with the Spirit.

✠The children of God are not those whose hearts are sometimes touched by the Spirit, who yield to its power now and then. It is only those who are led by the Spirit always that He acknowledges as His children. It is time to receive the Spirit today when whoever seek for it can receive. Seek and pray earnestly for the blessing of the Spirit, and believe for it. We must have it, and heaven is waiting to bestow it.

"Ask, and it will be opened to you. For every one who asks receives, and he who seeks finds, and to him who knocks it will be opened. What father among you, if his son asks for a fish, will instead of a fish give him a serpent; or if he asks for an egg, will give him a scorpion? If you then, who are evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will the heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to those who ask Him?" (Luke 11:9-13).

"He who did not spare His own Son but gave Him up for us all, will He not also give us all things with Him?" (Rom 8:32).

"Ask, and you will receive, that your joy may be full" (John 16:24).

Praise the Lord! Glory to our real Father in heaven who bestows His Holy Spirit upon us sinners!



## 11. Our Real Father Who Has Bestowed Another Fruit of Life upon Us His Fallen Children

### (1) People Who Enjoy Foolish Adventure

In order that Adam and Eve, the first children of God on earth who had not yet experienced death or pain, might live a life of eternal happiness without death, our Father showed them the ways and conditions for everlasting life. And He also warned them of the terrible pit of destruction in which they might fall if they would disregard the conditions, and gave them cautions and instructions repeatedly to be on guard against it,

As for the condition for eternal life of happiness He said, "The Lord God made to grow every tree that is pleasant to the sight and good for food, the tree of life also in the midst of the garden" (Gen. 2:9). "The Lord God took the man and put him in the garden of Eden to till it and keep it... and commanded the man, saying, 'You may freely eat of every tree of the garden, ... and live forever, (Gen 2:15,16).

As for the way that leads to the pit of death He warned him clearly, saying, "You shall not eat of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, neither shall you touch it," that is "the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, for in the day that you eat of it you shall die" (Gen. 2:6, 3:3, 2:17).

Therefore now they were well instructed in regard to the ways and conditions for eternal life as well as

for death. But these first children fearlessly attempted a terrible and foolish adventure: they trifled with the words of their truthful real Father and inclined their ears to the whisperings of the enemy who had climbed over the wall of Eden and enticed them into partaking of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil which was full of deadly poison of death. The adventure attempted by trifling the words of the Father resulted immediately in rapid spread of the deadly poison through their whole bodies and souls, and their immortality that was promised on condition of obedience was forever forfeited. Who could know, in the moment of temptation, the terrible consequences that would result from one wrong step taken against God's word by following the enemy's suggestion? How could they love adventure so indiscreetly as to dare doubt their Father's words?

But my brethren and sisters! Do not be astonished. Many more children than the first two, millions and tens of millions of God's children of today are at this very hour enjoying the same dreadful adventure as did the first holy pair in the beginning, and all are flooding in a lump into the great snare of death, forming a flood of corpse. Some may be perplexed and ask, "What do you mean by that?" But it is true that almost all the human race on earth, excluding a few, keep eating that very fruit of the forbidden tree that the first holy pair ate and died, and they are all going down toward destruction.

Then before I tell you about the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, let me tell you about one more thing.

There are only two ways for life and death either in Eden or on this earth today and in the future heavenly paradise too. All who partake of the tree of knowledge become doomed to degradation and death by its poison. And all who forsake the forbidden fruit and only enjoy taking the fruit of the tree of life become the heirs of eternal life of happiness both on earth and in heaven. This is the only immutable law of life and death that the Creator our Father has established, who is "Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending," (Rev. 1:8, K.J.V.)

We well know that there were both tree of life and tree of the knowledge of good and evil in Eden, and that they will also be present in the future paradise. But we do not know what is today's fruit of life and the forbidden fruit which is very important to know for our survival today.

4 (2) The Tree of Life that even the Fallen Sinners can Partake of and Live

Let us now learn about today's tree of life. When Adam and Eve tried to hide their shame hurriedly with fig leaves right after their transgression when the robe of light that had enshrouded them disappeared, our Father of infinite love and mercy provided them with a garment of sheepskin, a garment of the Saviour's righteousness, instead of their lost robe of glorious light.

Moreover, for His earthly children who were wandering around after having forfeited the tree of life that sinners cannot partake of. He provided another tree of life that even the greatest sinners can partake of and live forever; that is the word tree of life that proceeds out of His mouth who is the source of eternal life as He said, "Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceeds out of the mouth of God" (Matt. 4:4). This is why Peter said, "Lord to whom shall we go? You have the words of eternal life" (John 6:68).

Now, only by partaking of the word tree of life, we sinners become enabled to restore the life everlasting that we have forfeited in Eden. This is another form of the tree of life that our Father mercifully bestowed upon us as we were wandering around after having lost access to the life-giving fruit in Eden. Jesus also added, "It is the spirit that gives life... The words (Bible) that I have spoken to you are spirit and life" (John 6:63). "You search the Scriptures, because you think that in them you have eternal life." "Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceeds from the mouth of God" (John 5:39, Matt. 4:4).

O what a wonderful and precious gift of our heavenly Father for His sinful children! Now we need not sorrow for the life-giving fruit that we have forfeited in Eden. This another form of life giving fruit is not in the slightest degree inferior to that in Eden in bringing us eternal life. On the contrary it is more convenient to take, and with the same effect. The only

differences are in their forms, in the method of partaking of and the location of the trees.

The former one was the fruit on the tree; we were able to see it with our eyes, pluck it with our hands, and eat it through our mouth, and it was in the midst of the Garden. But the latter one is made of letters which altogether constitute His word that is filled with His Spirit and life, that we see through the eyes of the soul, and pluck with the hand of the heart, and eat through the mouth of the soul. It is located in the midst of the Bible; anywhere in the world the Bible is found we can easily obtain it and eat and live. We need not attempt to go to the Eden. Moreover, in Eden only the sinless ones could partake of it, but that which we have now sinners and anyone can freely pluck and eat and live forever. Should we not praise and thank our Father for this?

Moreover, He has given us the walking word tree of life, that is, Jesus Christ His Son. He said, "I am the bread of life." "I am the living bread which came down from heaven; if anyone eats of this bread, he will live forever" (John 6:48, 51).

Truly, Jesus Christ is the Tree of Life that brings us perfect eternal life, that has been given from God; He is the Word that has been with God from the beginning (John 1:1). And this "Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, and we beheld His glory, ... full of grace and truth," and He was the Tree of Life, (John 1:14, K.J.V.)

(3) The Beautiful Fruit of the Tree of the Knowledge of good and Evil that enchanted Man

Now the story of the tree of knowledge. In the Garden of Eden the tree of the knowledge of good and evil was standing in parallel with the tree of life in the middle as if they were in jealousy of each other. "The tree of life in the midst of the garden and the tree of the knowledge of good and evil" stood parallel (Gen. 2:9). "But God said, 'You shall not eat of the fruit of the tree, ... neither shall you touch it'" (Gen. 3:3).

As the tree of the knowledge of good and evil was standing in parallel competitively with the tree of life in the midst of the garden, so is today's forbidden tree standing jealously in parallel with the word tree of life in the midst of the Bible. And as the tree of knowledge became a tree like the tree of life in Eden, today's tree of knowledge is a word tree like the word tree of life, standing in the midst of the Bible being the tree consisting of words as well.

Today the fate of every member of the entire human race depends upon which tree he chooses to partake of; either the word tree of life, or the word tree of knowledge that are standing in parallel in the midst of the Bible.

As for the forbidden fruit in Eden in the beginning, it was not of ugly appearance as we think of a deadly fruit to be, it was standing in strong jealousy of the other, and not in the slightest degree inferior to it in appearance, in beauty, and in fragrance; it seemed



peerless in all respects. As Eve, a paragon of beauty beheld it, she was so fascinated by it that she could not remember the fruit of the tree of life standing right beside it; and standing aghast, she found it "good for food and pleasing to the eye, and also desirable for gaining wisdom" (Gen. 3:6). Then she was led to doubt her Father's words, murmuring to herself "How fair! I wonder why my Father has forbidden me such a tender and beautiful fruit as this! I wonder why!" We can imagine that it was so beautiful as to excel the tree of life.

O the forbidden tree so exceedingly beautiful in the sight of Eve, who could even dream of it to be so poisonous that it could kill all mankind!

This was a result that only those children who believe the words of the Father to the letter and obey Him without reasoning, could possibly guess. As the forbidden tree so bewitched man, so is the tree of knowledge of today in the midst of the Bible bewitching and destroying all Adams and Eves in the world, for it is so poisonous enough to kill all the human race. Who will expose this grievous fact before the world and warn of its danger? Yesterday and today, everyday, millions and tens of millions of my brethren and sisters who partake of this dreadful tree are setting their feet in the path that leads to destruction forming a flood of corpse.

(4) Analysis of the Life-giving Fruit and the Forbidden Fruit

Now we will learn what they are made of.

a. The Fruit of the Tree of Life

As it was, in Eden, made of God's pure love and life itself without any poisonous foreign matter, so is today's word fruit of life made of nothing but of His love, mercy, and tenderness—the true doctrine of the Bible that God His whole self is love.

Love is the light and life of God. With Him is no evil and no poisonous character; His life and whole entity is love. If He could be deprived of His love, He would pass away immediately like the sun deprived of its rays. His whole heart and life is love; He Himself is made of love. He does not have even the shadow of evil but only goodness, mercy and steadfast love. The doctrines and truths that teach the love of God as discovered from the Bible are today's word tree of life that gives light and joy and (everlasting) life to the children of earth. And from the lives and characters of those who eat of this tree of life bear also various fruits—"love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, and temperance" (Gal. 5:22, 23). These are the nine fruits of the Spirit, peculiar fruits of regeneration that can be produced only by those man-trees who eat of today's heaven-sent fruit of life.

b. The Fruit of the Knowledge of Good and Evil

As it was a mixture of good and evil in the garden

of Eden, so is today's forbidden fruit a mixture of mostly good and a little bit of evil added to it. As, in our homes, when we would try to catch rats, we make raticides with grains or sweet potatoes or something else and a little amount of rat poison and disguise it to look beautiful, so was the fruit of the forbidden tree in Eden so beautiful that it looked "good for food, delightful to the eyes." and fragrant, but it was mixed with deadly poison. Likewise, Satan the great enemy of today has made in the midst of the Bible his fascinating tree of knowledge; the mixture of the truth of God's mercy, love, and tenderness, and his plausible doctrines and cunning suggestions. To analyze it more closely, it apparently emphasizes that God is a God of love, mercy, and goodness, but on the other side, it suggests that He is a strict and stubborn God who is reluctant to forgive sinners, but takes pleasure in destroying them, so relentless that He finds satisfaction in the fiery judgment, fearful and dreadful in contrast with Jesus. These suggestions are his colorful doctrines devised to destroy all the children of God on earth. These are the fruits of the word tree of knowledge that Satan the great adversary has set up dauntlessly in the midst of the Bible so that he might destroy all the human race.

To say it again, all the teachings and doctrines that apparently seem to begin with God's character of love and mercy, but looking into the inside of the story, they cannot testify plainly nor speak with strength about the love of God, and rather conclude with a fear-

ful impression that He is a stern Judge, cruel to sinners. These are the fruits of the forbidden word tree that kill the children of God today. All the children of God who partake of this tree of knowledge offer prayers and praises only to Jesus, and depart further and further away from the Father the source of life and love, who loved them "so much that He gave His only begotten Son," who is "the fountain of living waters" (eternal life), and they fall exhausted and die off in the vast desert, beside the "broken cisterns" (Jer. 2:13).

In this hour our loving God and Jesus are exclaiming to us loudly, "You shall not eat of the fruit.... neither shall you touch it," "for in the day that you eat of it you shall die" (Gen.3:3, 2:17).

<sup>7</sup>(5) Symptom of the Souls Who Partake of Either Fruit and the Means to Cure Them

When I was a little boy there was a clever puppy at my home. He was so cute and clever that everyone loved him and he was my best friend. One day as he became quite big something strange happened. He had always taken kindly to me, but suddenly he stopped recognizing me; and without any response to my calls he started jumping all over the place with virulent eyes. I was too little to know what was going on at that time; my parents told me later that he had eaten the raticide that neighbors had put somewhere to kill rats. His violent spasm was the symptom of having eaten the

poison. After a few minutes he died. If I had attempted to hug him out of pity as usual, he would have bitten me his master and his friend in a fury. Although several decades have passed, I still cannot forget the tragic death of my friend and the appalling fitful symptom of a dog stricken by a raticide.

Likewise, if God's children are, through whatever agencies, led to take the fruit of knowledge just once, its poison contaminates all through the body, mind, and soul; its symptom is more terrifying than that of a dog stricken by a raticide.

The normal eyes and mind of one's soul become completely deranged to lose his sanity, and so loving and merciful heavenly Father is looked upon as a devil of appalling feature: from thence he seeks to escape from His presence. It was the case with Adam and Eve in Eden. No sooner had they eaten the poisonous fruit (the fruit of the forbidden tree) than the Father whom they had so loved and become so attracted to and who had been their best Friend suddenly began to look loathsome and dreadful. They should have run out to meet their Father at His visiting call as before, but once they had eaten the fruit, His approaching sound led them to flee in a horror and they sought to hide themselves. "And they heard the sound of the Lord God walking in the garden in the cool of the day, and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the Lord God among the trees of the garden" (Gen. 3:8). But He called them, who are still His loving friends and children as before, in His usual tender

voice. "Where are you?" (Gen. 3:9), and there came back an absurd answer. "I heard the sound of Thee in the Garden, and I was afraid... and hid myself" (Gen. 3:10). "Alas!" He grasped the situation and said, "Have you eaten of the tree of which I commanded you not to eat?" (Gen. 3:11). This was the first symptom of insanity after the holy pair ate the fruit of the tree of knowledge.

From then on until today innumerable children of God have been deceived by the great murderer Satan, and have been eating of the forbidden fruit again and again, becoming mad and still mad, dying and perishing unceasingly until today. Alas! Who will warn the people of this appalling fact?

On the other hand those who have partaken of the truthful tree of life that is lumped with God's pure love, light, and vitality, have restored their original mental power and eyes of the soul, and they behold their Father in the light of the true knowledge of His character and image of infinite love, mercy, and tenderness. And they are led to love and follow their Father more closely than Jesus. Like Adam and Eve before the transgression, they rejoice at cuddling up to their Father's bosom of love and cling to His arms of love as the little ones love to cling to their daddy's arms. They are again able to live a happy life on earth today and walk with Him as His close friends as Enoch walked with Him for three hundred years as His friend.

Our greatest need of today is the life-giving fruit of the word tree of life. We need true shepherds who can



impart the fruit of life to the people. On the pulpit the true shepherds will teach not only the love of the Holy Son Jesus but of the unspeakable love of the Father with great power exclaiming as Apostle John did.—“Behold the love of the Father!” And through their teaching, people will be drawn to the Father, the Fountain of living water, and be united with Him, and will abide in His bosom. And the Father will impart to them the eternal life and “every good endowment and every perfect gift” (James 1:17), and at last the barrier that has separated the earthly children from their Father for six thousand years will be broken down; it will be the day that “the hearts of the fathers are turned to their children, and the hearts of the children to their fathers”—a day of reunion so inspiring and glorious (Mal. 4:6).

From hence whether awake or sleep they become immersed in the wonderful Father’s love and their life becomes a succession of greatest happiness and greatest joy. They are led to love their Eldest Brother Jesus more and more whom God has sent; they are innocent lambs who follow Jesus the Lamb wherever He goes, and become real children of God who live only for the glory of God “whether eat, or drink, or do anything” (1 Cor. 10:31), and become the heirs to the life of God—the eternal life. These are the orders to pass in crossing the threshold of eternal life that He has designed for His children who partake of the fruit of the word tree of life.

But the churches and believers who partake of the tree of knowledge that Satan presents to them are different: the preachers on the pulpit neither can preach and testify the Father’s love nor know about His love themselves; for they themselves are in deep darkness about it. And they are always in a habit of speaking of Jesus, but are not able to say plainly about the greatness of the Father’s love, and their followers suffer from thirst and hunger for the love of God, the living water for their souls and are brought to the verge of death for lack of the knowledge of His love, and misunderstand His character; and the enemy Satan grasps this opportunity and represents Him as a fearful, cruel tyrant, and separates them forever from their heavenly Father who is the “Fountain of living water” (Jer. 2:13). Therefore filled with false conceptions of God who is the source of love and life, they fail to come out to receive the unlimitedly pouring sunrays of His love that is brightening the way like a burning sun, and become surrounded by the cloud of misapprehension and darkness of terror, and at last vanish from this world forever. Therefore the first purpose for Jesus to come to this earth was to remove the darkness of the clouds of misunderstanding that kept the sunrays of God’s love from shining upon us to bring us eternal life and light. “Since therefore the children share in flesh and blood, He Himself likewise partook of the same nature, that through death He might destroy him who has the power of death, that is, the devil, and

deliver all those who through fear of death were subject to lifelong bondage. For surely it is not with angels that He is concerned but with the descendants of Abraham" (Heb. 2:14-16). He also exclaimed that eternal life is first to know and receive the infinite love of the Father "the only true God," and second, to know the love of Jesus Christ and follow "Him whom He had sent" (John 17:3). If anyone knows just one of their love or does not know either one of them, his eternal life is imperfect like a car with one sided wheel that cannot take him to heaven. It is also like an eagle with one sided wing which is impossible to ascend to heaven.

Brethren and sisters! Let us inquire of ourselves and reflect upon our past belief. Have I been imparting to others the fruit of the tree of life or of the tree of knowledge? Have I been living on the fruit of the tree of life or on the tree of knowledge? The symptoms manifested in ourselves plainly tell us. Was it a life of fear and escape from God or a life of overflowing joy with as much love for the Father as for Jesus whom He has sent?

If we have been taking something other than the fruit of the tree of life, we should escape from it immediately and wisely as we are warned,—"Save yourself like a gazelle from the hunter. Like a bird from the hand of the fowler" (Pro. 6:5). Instead, in order to be saved and cured from the poison of the fruit of the tree of

knowledge which spread through the whole body, we should immediately come to the tree of life and eat of it. It is also standing in the midst of the Bible. As we partake of it, it will counteract the poison spread through the body like melting snow, and the sunrays of our heavenly Father will cure our souls completely. At the same time our mind and eyes shall be restored and we will see Him as He really is who loves us so much. And exclaiming "O He has been so loving Father to me," we will surrender ourselves wholly to His love, and leave His bosom never again. We will live as His sons and daughters conforming to His perfect image and character, and will become little Jesuses who possess the fine character of Jesus as He was sent by God to be our example, and will ascend to heaven with Him.

This is our real Father's another gift, the fruit of the word tree of life that He has granted in boundless love for His fallen children on earth.

Now we will end this section by drawing a summarizing diagram.

### The First Tree of Life and the Tree of Knowledge in Eden

	<b>The Tree of Life</b>	<b>The Tree of Knowledge</b>
Purpose of the Tree	Eternal life for God's children	Prevention of Satan's power
Location	In the midst of the Garden of Eden	In the midst of the Garden of Eden
Task	to represent God, the King of life	to represent Satan, the King of death
Shape of the Fruit	beautiful	fascinating
Constituents	full of God's invigorating vitality	full of poison of the king of death
Symptoms and States of Those who Partake!	<p>① have correct eyes and see Him as He is and follow Him with joy</p> <p>② body, mind, and soul is filled with God's vitality; and live a life full of love, joy, and Peace</p> <p>③ live a life transforming continually into His character and image</p> <p>④ live a life filled with joy and become good heralds of the life-giving fruit</p>	<p>① go mad and lose one's head and look upon God as a wicked God and a stern tyrant, and live a life of escape from fear</p> <p>② body, mind, and soul feel burdensome, tired, flagging, full of discomfort, fretfulness, without peace</p> <p>③ live a life transforming continually into the malicious character and image of Satan</p> <p>④ live a life filled with anxiety and fear and become evil agents of</p>

	<b>The Tree of Life</b>	<b>The Tree of Knowledge</b>
Result of taking It	whoever takes it obtains eternal life	whoever takes it becomes perished
		Satan by distributing fruit of the tree of knowledge

### Today's Tree of Life and Tree of Knowledge

	<b>The Tree of Life</b>	<b>The Tree of Knowledge</b>
Purpose of the Tree	Eternal life for God's children	Destruction of God's children
Location	In the midst of the Bible	In the midst of the Bible
Task	Lead to God, the source of life to give eternal life	Lead to Satan, the king of death to destroy
Shape of the Fruit	Undisguised simple truth of the Bible as revealed plainly in it	Complicated plausible truth of some Scriptural words mixed with other adulterated cunning suggestions
Constituents	The truth that heavenly Father is love, His whole is love, Good tidings from heaven that bring light, joy, forgiveness of sin, happiness, and eternal life for sinners.	Fearful, unpleasant theories from Satan which gives heavy burdens to sinners, giving suggestions and impressions that God is love but He is a stern Judge who is reluctant to forgive sinners, pleased to punish them with fire, and fills the souls with fearful conceptions of God



Heralds of the Fruit	The Tree of Life	The Tree of Knowledge
Symptoms and Conditions of Those Who Partake of It	<p>1. Have clear mind and spiritual eyes and see the Father of love as He is, and love and follow Him with joy.</p> <p>2. Soul, mind, and body is filled with vigor and vitality of God and live a life of peace, joy, and happiness, and love all mankind as they love their family and themselves.</p>	<p>1. The spiritual eyes become blinded and their heart and mind cannot accept the plainly stated scriptural testimonies that God is love; they cannot believe it but doubt and distrust in their heart. He is looked upon as a dreadful God.</p> <p>2. After taking this fruit (false truth), one's heart and soul at times feel momentary ecstasy and fanatical joy and happiness at first, but the aftermath is a greater sense of emptiness, discomfort, skepticism, and disbelief in redemption. They reiterate the name of Jesus habitually and of the Father as a matter of formalism but have no love for Him in heart. They rather unconsciously seek to evade from His presence, and live a life of restless, irritated heart and soul.</p>

	The Tree of Life	The Tree of Knowledge
Result of Taking It	<p>3. live a life transforming continually into the loving character of the heavenly Father and the image of Jesus.</p> <p>4. Become faithful heralds who go forth with joy to impart to their brethren and kinsmen the word-tree of life.</p>	<p>3. As days go by, the true meaning of regeneration or sanctification becomes harder to comprehend; their character become more and more self-righteous, proud, begot, and unconsciously live a life conforming to the mind and character of Satan.</p> <p>4. Become faithful agents of Satan who go forth in a hurry, blindly and fanatically to impart the word-tree of knowledge to others.</p>
	Lead themselves and others to the everlasting kingdom where the heavenly Father is waiting for them.	Lead themselves and others to the vale of desolation where abound evil spirits.

## 12. Our Real Father Who Sanctifies Us and Makes Us Bear Fruit

Jesus said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God" (John 3:3, K.J.V.). "Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again" (John 3:7, K.J.V.). "That which is born of the flesh is flesh" at any rate; "and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit" at any rate. "Except a man be born... of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God" (John 3:6,5, K.J.V.).

"And I say unto you" (Luke 11:9, K.J.V.), "I am the True Vine, and My Father is the Husbandman. Every branch in Me that beareth not fruit He taketh away and every branch that beareth fruit, He purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit" (John 15:1,2, K.J.V.). As whether the harvest of the field is rich or scanty, and whether the fruit trees are fruitful or fruitless depend on the hands of the farmer, so does it depend on the hands of the great Farmer "husbandman" (John 15:1, K.J.V.), the Lord of heaven and earth whether the fruits of character in human-trees on earth are fruitful or fruitless.

The most industrious Farmer in the universe, our Father takes away harsh and rough branches from our characters with His pruning shears (John 15:2), and good branches of characters He trims and cultivates

and He chooses trees bearing good fruits to transplant them to His beautiful Garden. "For the vineyard of the Lord of hosts is the house of Israel, and the men of Judah are his pleasant planting" (Isa. 5:7). "You did not choose Me, but I chose you and appointed you that you should go and bear fruit and that your fruit should abide" (John 15:16). "The fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance; against such" fruit bearing "there is no law" (Gal. 5:22-23). Jesus said, "Every branch of Mine that bears no fruit, He takes away, and every branch that does bear fruit, He prunes, that it may bear more fruit" (John 15:2). "Therefore I tell you, "Not every one who says to Me, 'Lord, Lord,' shall enter the kingdom of heaven but" it will be given to a nation producing the good fruits of it, "who does the will of my Father who is in heaven" (Matt. 21:43, 7:21, 21:43).

When I stand before the congregations I sometimes ask the people, "Are you indeed Jesus' disciples?"

"Yes, we are His disciples."

"Are you sure you are saved then?"

"Yes, I am sure I am saved."

I frequently hear such brisk answers. But I continue, "Then let us be confirmed through the Bible whether we are indeed His disciples, who are saved." And we open the Bible. Jesus said, "Ye bear much fruit, so shall ye be My disciples" (John 15:8, K.J.V.). "But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering,

gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance" (Gal. 5:22,23, K.J.V.).

"You will know them by their fruits. Are grapes gathered from thorns, or figs from thistles? So, every sound tree bears good fruit," the fruit of the Spirit, "but the bad tree bears evil fruit" (Matt. 7:16,17). "which are these: adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like... They which do such things" are not My disciples and "shall not inherit the kingdom of God" (Gal.5:19-21, K.J.V.). "Therefore I tell you, the kingdom of God will be taken away from you and given to a nation producing the fruits of it" (Matt. 21:43). "Examine yourselves, "...be not deceived: God is not mocked" (2 Cor. 13:5, K.J.V., Gal. 6:7, K.J.V.). Therefore "bear fruit that befits repentance," and without bearing fruit "do not presume to say to yourselves, 'We have Abraham as our father': for I tell you, God is able from these stones to raise up children to Abraham. Even now the axe" of judgment "is laid to the root of the trees: every tree therefore that does not bear good fruit is cut down and thrown into the fire" (Matt. 3:8-10). Thus we end our conversation and start examining ourselves solemnly and offer prayers of contrition.

Truly it is not earthly rank, nor birth, nor nationality, nor religious privilege, which proves that we are the heirs of heaven or the members of family of God.

Those who have the character of God, who possess His love, a love that embraces all humanity, are the heirs of heaven and the children of God.

Now let us get back to the story of the Great "Husbandman" (John 15:1, K.J.V.). He is speaking to us, "Son of man, how does the wood of the vine surpass any wood?... Is wood taken from it to make anything? Do men take a peg from it to hang any vessel on? Lo, it is given to the fire for fuel" (Ezek. 15:2-4). Yes, it is not because the vine looks as beautiful or lovely that it is esteemed above many trees. On the contrary it is not more beautiful or useful than other trees. It cannot be made into any vessel, or a peg, or any lumber for building a house; it is useful for nothing but to be thrown into the fire. But there is one reason that makes it an object of admiration of all beholders among all other trees; it is because of its fruits. The fruits cover all imperfections and defects of the vine and make the whole vine look beautiful. But without the fruits it becomes the most useless and ugly tree among all other trees. The grapevine is ourselves, "for the vineyard of the Lord of hosts is the house of Israel, and the men of Judah are His pleasant planting" (Isa. 5:7).

"Thou hast brought a vine out of Egypt (world),... and planted it..." And the vineyard Thy right hand hath planted, and the branch Thou madest strong for Thyself" (Ps. 80:8,15, K.J.V.). "He gathered out the stones thereof, and planted it with the choicest vine"

(Isa. 5:2, K.J.V.). "He pruned and hoed and commanded the cloud to rain upon it" (Isa. 5:6)— "the former and the latter rain" (Joel 2:23), and "made His sun rise on it" (Matt. 5:45), and "dugged about it and put on manure" (Luke 13:8).

Now the Great "Husbandman" (John 15:1, K.J.V.) says, "What more was there to do for My vineyard, that I have not done in it?" "I loved My vineyard" "so much that I gave My only begotten Son." "When I looked for it to yield grapes, why did it yield wild grapes?" (Isa. 5:4, John 3:16, Isa. 5:4). "Yet I planted you a choice vine, wholly of pure seed. How then have you turned degenerate and become a wild vine?" (Jer. 2:21). "He looked for justice, but behold, bloodshed; for righteousness, but behold, a cry!" (Isa. 5:7).

I have heard the following story. Somewhere in my country (Korea) there is a pear farm, where some trees on a part of the land bear much bigger and more pears without the fertilizer or manure than the trees in the elsewhere do. After probing the cause, it was found that during the Korean War (the June 25th Incident of Korea in 1950) dead bodies of numerous innocent people were thrown into the huge dugged hole in the ground and buried in it. And after many years people planted pear trees on the site without knowing it. And because the dead bodies of the innocent people became manure, it causes great harvest each year.

Our heavenly Father the Great "Husbandman" (John 15:1, K.J.V.) in heaven so loved the house of

Israel, the vineyard of the Lord of hosts, and the men of Judah His pleasant planting that He has buried His only Son Jesus under the vine of Judah (Calvary) in the midst of the vineyard (the earth) and has been eagerly waiting to see them bear good fruits in proportion to the Good Manure. Now He is saying, "What more was there to do for My vineyard, that I have not done in it? I have given My only Son to be the manure for them" (Isa. 5:4).

But afterward there came from His lips a sound of a grievous sigh of disappointment and despair: "When I looked for it to yield grapes, why did it yield wild grapes?" (Isa. 5:4). "I planted you a choice vine, wholly of pure seed. How then have you turned degenerate, and become a wild vine?" (Jer. 2:21).

And the expectation of the Great Husbandman has been broken in pieces. O what a great number of people, without the good fruits (Gal. 5:22,23), the genuine, sacred fruits of character, are saying chimerically, "I am a child of God. I will enter heaven. I am saved"! Notwithstanding they have made His grace futile and disappointed Him so bitterly they still jubilate, calling, "Lord, Lord." Let us listen to the voice of the Holy Husbandman again. "Now I will tell you what I will do to My vineyard. I will remove its hedge, and it shall be devoured; I will break down its wall, and it shall be trampled down. I will make it a waste; it shall not be pruned or hoed, and briars and thorns will grow up; I will also command the clouds that they rain



no rain upon it" (Isa. 5:5,6). "For ten acres of vineyard shall yield but one bath, and a homer of seed shall yield but an ephah" (Isa. 5:10).

The Bible is exclaiming toward Israel today, "Turn back, turn back from your evil ways: for why will you die, O house of Israel?" (Ezek. 33:11). "Come... before you are driven away like the drifting chaff, before there comes upon you the fierce anger of the Lord, before there comes upon you the day of the wrath of the Lord" (Zeph. 2:2). "Sow for yourselves in righteousness, reap in mercy; break up your fallow ground" of your heart: "for it is time to seek the Lord, till He come and rain righteousness upon you" (Hosea 10:12, K.J.V.).

Our real Father who is "merciful and gracious and slow to anger," weak in punishing His children, He is again exclaiming, "If you return, O Israel, says the Lord, to Me you should return... Remove your abominations from My presence," come and "circumcise yourselves to the Lord, remove the foreskin of your hearts... lest My wrath go forth like fire, and burn with none to quench it, because of the evil of your doings" (Jer. 4:1,4).

"Return, ye backsliding children, and I will heal your backslidings. "For I am merciful, saith the Lord, and I will not keep anger forever" (Jer. 3:22,12, K.J.V.).

"Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ. "He hath begotten us

again unto a lively hope," with the "holy and blameless" in character and "to an inheritance... reserved in heaven for you" (Eph. 1:3,4; K.J.V., 1 Pet. 1:3,4, K.J.V.).

To the Holy Husbandman our real Father who has given His only Son Jesus to be manure for us to produce fruits of our sacred characters, and is giving us the fresh rain of the Holy Spirit from heaven boundlessly, and pruning our character-branches to make us beautiful, glory and praise forever and ever!  
Praise the Lord!

### 13. Our Real Father Who Has Given Up His Only Begotten Son to Save Us

"Behold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God: therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew Him not" (1 John 3:1, K.J.V.).

"In this was manifested the love of God toward us, because that God sent His only begotten Son into the world, that we might live through Him" (1 John 4:9, K.J.V.). "He does not deal with us according to our sins, nor requite us according to our iniquities. For as the heavens are high above the earth, so great is His steadfast love toward those who fear Him" (Ps. 103:10,11).

"But the mercy of the Lord is from everlasting to everlasting upon them that fear Him;" "like as a father pitieth his children, so the Lord pitieth them that fear Him" (Ps.103:17,13, K.J.V.).

"He hath made Him (His Son Jesus Christ) to be sin for us (sinners), who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in Him" (2 Cor. 5:21, K.J.V.). "He loved us, and sent His Son to be the propitiation for our sins." "For God sent not His Son into the world to condemn and punish the world, but that the world through Him might be saved" (1 John 4:10, K.J.V., John 3:17, K.J.V.). O what a great and

unconditional love of our heavenly Father! "Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that He loved us, and sent His Son to be the propitiation for our sins" (1 John 4:10, K.J.V.). "All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the Lord hath laid on Him" His Son Jesus "the iniquity of us all" (Isa. 53:6, K.J.V.). It was to "deliver all those who through fear of death were subject to lifelong bondage" under the power of death "for surely it is not with angels" of heaven "that He is concerned but with the descendants of Abraham," the sinners of earth (Heb 2:15,16). What a reassuring and cheerful message worthy of all praise!

"He is gracious to him, and says, Deliver him from going down into the pit" of death, "I have found a ransom" (Job 33:24).

O what an amazing love of our heavenly Father it is! If it had not been for His gracious provision, who could have escaped from the horrible pit of death?

"Herein is love, not that we loved God," but "He first loved us" (1 John 4:10,19, K.J.V.). "My son (you sinner)! God will provide Himself a lamb for a burnt offering" (Gen. 22:8, K.J.V.). "Return unto Me: for I have redeemed thee" (Isa. 44:22).

Praise the Lord! "Thou hast held back my life from the pit of destruction" (Isa. 38:17).

Though all these evidences have been given, the enemy of good blinded the minds of men, so that they looked upon God with fear; they thought of Him as

severe and unforgiving. Satan led men to conceive of God as a being whose chief attribute is stern justice. — one who is a severe judge, a harsh, exacting creditor. He pictured our heavenly Father as a being who is watching with jealous eyes to discern the errors and mistakes of men, that He may visit judgments upon them.

It was to remove this dark shadow, by revealing to the world the infinite love of God, that Jesus came to live among men. It was to make manifest the Father that the Son of God came from heaven. "No man hath seen God at any time: the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father. He hath declared Him" (John 1:18, K.J.V.).

It is from the Father's heart that the streams of divine compassion, manifest in Christ, flow out to the children of men. Jesus, the tender, pitying Saviour was God "manifest in the flesh" (1 Tim. 3:16). None but the Son of God could accomplish our redemption; for only He who was in the bosom of the Father could declare Him. Only He who knew the height and depth of the love of God could make it manifest. Nothing less than the infinite sacrifice made by Christ in behalf of fallen man could express the Father's love to lost humanity.

"God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son." He gave Him not only to live among men, to bear their sins, and die their sacrifice. He gave Him to the fallen race forever. He who was

one with God has linked Himself with the children of men by ties that are never to be broken. Jesus is "not ashamed to call them brethren" (Heb. 2:11, K.J.V.): He is our Sacrifice, our Advocate, our Eldest Brother, bearing our human form before the Father's throne, and through eternal ages one with the race He has redeemed—the Son of man. And all this is that man might be uplifted from the ruin and degradation of sin that He might reflect the love of God and share the joy of holiness.

The price paid for our redemption, the infinite sacrifice of our heavenly Father in giving His Son to die for us, should give us exalted conceptions of what we may become through Christ. As the inspired apostle John beheld the height, the depth, the breadth of the Father's love toward the perishing race, he was filled with adoration and reverence; and failing to find suitable language in which to express the greatness and tenderness of this love, he called upon the world to behold it.

"Behold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God" (1 John 3:1, K.J.V.). What a value this places upon man! Through transgression the sons of man became subjects to Satan. Through faith in the atoning sacrifice of Christ the sons of Adam may become the sons of God. By assuming human nature, Christ elevates humanity. Fallen men are placed where.

through connection with Christ, they may indeed become worthy of the name "sons of God." Such love is without parallel. Children of the heavenly King! Precious promise! Theme for the most profound meditation! The matchless love of God for a world that did not love Him! The thought has a subduing power upon the soul and brings the mind into captivity to the will of God. The more we study the divine character in the light of the cross, the more we see mercy, tenderness, and forgiveness blended with equity and justice, and the more clearly we discern innumerable evidences of a love that is infinite and a tender pity surpassing a mother's yearning sympathy for her wayward child.

"He is gracious unto him, and saith, 'Deliver him from going down to the pit: I have found a ransom'" (Job 33:24, K.J.V.).

—Hymn—

1. For God so loved the world  
That He gave His only begotten Son,  
That whosoever believeth in Him  
Should not perish but have everlasting life,  
That whosoever believeth in Him  
Should not perish but have everlasting life.
2. Heavenly Father loved me a sinner  
And gave up His only Son,  
That I might be brought to His arms,  
What a wondrous love it is to me!  
That I might be brought to His arms,  
What a wondrous love it is to me!  
What a wondrous love it is to me!
3. My Father so loved me  
And He will again send His Son,  
That I might have life there above  
With Him to live for eternity,  
That I might have life there above  
With Him to live for eternity,  
With Him to live for eternity.



#### 14. Our Real Father Who Was Tormented with His Son on the Cross to Save Us

“Behold, the hour cometh, yea, is now come, that ye shall be scattered, every man to his own, and shall leave Me alone: and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with Me” (John 16:32, K.J.V.). This is what Jesus our Eldest Brother said to His disciples who would abandon Him just before He would be crucified on the cross as a sacrificial Lamb for sinners on earth. He knew that although His disciples would flee away leaving Him alone, His Father, who had not sent His innocent Son alone into this fearful world of devil, but came down with Him to walk with Him from the manger of Bethlehem, would never leave Him alone but stay with Him to the end.

“Then said Jesus unto them, When ye have lifted up the Son of man, then shall ye know that... He that sent Me is with Me: the Father hath not left Me alone: for I do always those things that please Him” (John 8:28,29, K.J.V.). “Behold, the hour cometh, yea, is now come, that ye shall be scattered, every man to his own, and shall leave Me alone: and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with Me” (John 16:32, K.J.V.). “Know... that the Father is in Me, and I in Him. ... I and My Father are one” (John 10:38,30, K.J.V.). Therefore “whosoever shall receive Me receiveth Him that sent Me...” and he that despiseth Me despiseth

Him that sent Me” (Luke 9:48, 10:16, K.J.V.).

In other words, “whosoever accepts Me accepts Him that sent Me, whosoever treats Me unkindly treats Him unkindly who sent Me, and whosoever persecutes Me persecutes Him that sent Me.” “The Father is in Me, and I in Him” (John 10:38, K.J.V.).

Therefore whoever crucifies Jesus the Son of God crucifies His Father who walks with Him as one, for Jesus is one with His Father (John 10:30).

Truly the agony of Jesus the Son of God in Isaiah 53 is also the agony of the Father.

“Who hath believed our report? (Isa. 53:1, K.J.V.). When “He (Jesus) was despised and rejected of men,” “the Father in Him was despised and rejected of them. When He was despised “as one from whom men hide their faces,” the Father was likewise despised in Him. “And we esteemed Him not” (Isa. 53:3). When He (Jesus) has borne our griefs and carried our sorrows, the Father in Him has borne our griefs and carried our sorrows (Isa. 53:4). When He was wounded and bruised for our transgressions and iniquities, the Father who was embracing Him was wounded and bruised (Isa. 53:5).

Many years ago, I heard from a minister whom I respect a lot, an experience that he had had during <the June 25th Incident of Korea> when he was a little boy. At that time he had a widowed mother and an elder sister. The planes of the enemies were pouring out bombs on the area he was living, and the

bursting sound filled all over the air. And his mother called him and his sister into the room helter-skelter, saying, "Whether we live or die, let us share our fate." And she made him lie flat on the floor, and her daughter on top of him, and threw herself upon them as to cover them for protection. O what a sacrificing love of a mother for her children! Perhaps she thinks as if she were a bulletproof iron plate that could protect her children safely under her. She was thinking to herself, "If the bombs of the enemies should fall upon me I would first burst and then my daughter and hopefully my only son will be spared!" What a great love of a mother for her only son!

Now Jesus says, "If ye then, being evil" (Luke 11:13), love your children so much, how could your heavenly Father send His only Son alone into the world of darkness where abound furious enemies? Truly "the Father is in Me, and I am in" the bosom of "the Father" (John 10:38). "I and the Father are one" (John 10:30). Yes, when Jesus, the only Son of God was wounded and bruised, the Father who was embracing Him was first wounded and bruised. With His chastisement and stripes we have peace and are healed; but it was really a chastisement and stripes of our heavenly Father who was holding Him in His arms (Isa. 53:5).

When the violent Roman soldiers and the more invidious Jewish leaders were nailing down mercilessly to the hands and feet of the only Son of God, they

were nailing down to the hands and feet of the Father who was embracing His Son in His bosom. When Jesus the Son was crucified on Calvary in the midst of the earth between heaven and earth, the Father who so loved the world that He gave His only-begotten Son and became one with the Son (John 10:30) was also crucified. "Behold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God... The world... knew Him not" (1 John 3:1). Behold the Father who, in order to save the world, came down with His Son to the land of Judea!

Behold the Father walking with His Son from the manger of Bethlehem to the hill of Calvary!

Behold the Father and the Son surrounded by the throng mocking and insulting like starving wolves and furious "dogs"! (Ps. 22:16).

Behold the Father and the Son who, to save sinners, are hung on the cross of Calvary between heaven and earth! O what an incomprehensible sacrifice of the Father and the Son "which passeth knowledge!" (Eph. 3:19, K.J.V.) It cannot be measured by our finite mind and understanding.

If I were an artist I would draw not one but two crosses on Calvary—one big, the other little; of the Father and of the Son.

I was much inspired while reading my favorite books, <Steps to Christ> and <The Desire of Ages>.

"God sacrificed Himself, in Christ, for man's redemption. God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto Himself" (2 Cor. 5:19)."

"From the time when He appeared as a babe in Bethlehem... to Calvary, the storm of Satan's wrath beat upon Him, but the more merclessly it fell, the more firmly did the Son of God cling to the hand of His Father, and press on in the bloodstained path."

"God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto Himself" (2 Cor. 5:19). God suffered with His Son. In the agony of Gethsemane, the death of Calvary, the heart of Infinite Love paid the price of our redemption."

"In the thick darkness" of Calvary "God's presence was hidden... The Father was with His Son. Yet His presence was not revealed... And in that dreadful hour Christ was not to be comforted with the Father's presence... In the thick darkness, God veiled the last human agony of His Son."

"No eyes could pierce the gloom of God's presence that surrounded the cross, and none could penetrate the deeper gloom that enshrouded the suffering soul of Christ..." But God suffered with His Son."

"The hosts of heaven (angels) veiled their faces from the fearful sight. Inanimate nature expressed sympathy with its insulted and dying Author. The sun refused to look upon the awful scene. Its full, bright rays were illuminating the earth at midday when suddenly it seemed to be blotted out... In that thick darkness God's presence was hidden... All heaven was filled with amazement... What a startling scene it was to the universe of heaven!"

"God loved the sinners so much that He gave Himself in the body of Christ, that He might save all humanity."

"God loved the world that He gave" not only "His only begotten Son" but Himself, "that whosoever" beholds the Father and the Son on Calvary and "believeth in Him" and His Father "should not perish but have everlasting life" (John 3:16).

Praise the Lord! Glory to our Father!

—The Two Crosses—

On a lonely hill far away

Are standing two crosses in parallel.

One, big

The other, little.

The big one is of the Father.

And the little one of the Son.

My Father and Eldest Brother

Just for me one sinner were crucified there.

—Hymn—

1. On a hill far away stood there two old crosses,  
The emblem of suffering and shame,  
There the Father and the Son, for to save fallen  
ones  
Suffered untold torment and pain.  
Refrain: So I'll cherish the two old crosses  
Till I come to see the great nail pierced  
hands.  
Just for me a sinner on the hill  
Slain the Holy Father and the Son.
2. On the hill Calvary stood there two old crosses  
Just for me the Father and the Son were slain  
With so precious blood and death infinite sacrifice  
was made.  
'Twas for all my life everlasting
3. On the hill Golgotha stood there two old crosses  
To save me His prodigal son;  
Holy Father and the Son gave up throne in heaven,  
What a wondrous love for me alone!

### 15. Our Real Father Who Abides in Us Personally

“Thus saith the high and lofty One, that inhabiteth eternity, whose name is Holy; I dwell in the high and holy place, with him also that is of a contrite and humble spirit, to revive the spirit of the humble, and to revive the heart of the contrite ones” (Isa. 57:15, K.J.V.).

The high and lofty One, King of the universe, our Father says that as He abode in His Eldest Son Jesus He would abide with His little sons and daughters of today: what an amazing fact it is! How does He abide in us then? For “God is” not a flesh but “a Spirit” (John 4:24). He abides in us through His Spirit. And He becomes a personal Friend and Father for every child of His. The Spirit of the Father, His Holy Spirit can either revive or destroy all the children of earth.

“It is Spirit that quickeneth,” and the Spirit is life. (John 6:63). Where the Spirit of our Father abides, the world and sinners can live, and where the Spirit is left neither the world nor sinners can survive. It is because the Spirit of our Father is life for sinners and the world. In the Bible we can see that it was not the flood but the withdrawal of the Father's Spirit from the world that caused the wicked world in the days of Noah to be destroyed completely.

The Lord said, “My Spirit shall not abide in man forever, for he is flesh, but his days shall be a hun-



dred and twenty years" (Gen. 6:3).

Therefore He had granted to the world His Spirit for a hundred and twenty years, and after that He withdrew His Spirit and buried their lifeless flesh in the water. O what a fearful and indispensable Spirit of our Father it is! Only this Spirit is our life everlasting.

Where the Spirit of our Father abides, there are eternal life, everlasting liberty, everlasting love, joy, peace, and happiness. Moreover, when the Spirit comes to us, the heavenly Father becomes our personal Friend and a personal Father as He was with Enoch. And with Him we eat, drink, work, talk, and walk along. This is a life of Enoch, and of Jesus, that which should be ours positively. It is only such children whom our Father will take to His kingdom as His permanent real permanent real children.

Jesus said, "You will be dragged before governors and kings for My sake, to bear testimony before them and the Gentiles. When they deliver you up, do not be anxious how you are to speak or what you are to say; for what you are to say will be given to you in that hour; for it is not you who speak but the" Holy Spirit of your Father speaking through you" (Matt. 10:18-20). The high and lofty One, the King of the whole universe, our heavenly Father who is no less humbler than Jesus declares that He would abide with His lowly, sinful children to share their trials, and as they would be dragged before wicked governors and kings. He would follow them and make replies on

behalf of them as a sinner though He Himself is sinless. O behold our heavenly Father, the King of the universe, giving answers pliantly and receiving guilty condemnation before the mean, wicked kings and governors of the earth! Among all men and angels in the universe who can find out one humbler and tenderer than He? Now we see that the humble Jesus was exactly like His Father in character.

"The Lord, your God, is in your midst, a warrior who gives victory; He will rejoice over you with gladness. He will renew you in His love; He will exult over you with loud singing" (Zeph. 3:17).

"The God who made the world and everything in it, being the Lord of heaven and earth, ... gives to all men life and breath and everything... Yet He is not far from each one of us, for in Him we live and move and have our being... We are indeed His offspring" (Acts 17:24-28).

And Jesus said, "Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on Me, the works that I do" while walking with God as one "shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do; because I go unto My Father, "For the Father Himself loveth you" (John 14:12, K.J.V., 16:27, K.J.V.).

Thus as Jesus our Eldest Brother on earth was "one" with the heavenly Father abiding in Him, we are also able to abide with and become one with our heavenly Father, the high and lofty One. This is what Jesus mentioned about in His last prayer to His Father. "I pray...

that they may all be one; even as Thou, Father, art in Me, and I in Thee, that they also may be in Us (Father and Me)'' that the love with which Thou hast loved Me may be in them, and I in them'' (John 17:21,26).

Therefore the call of the Visitor in Revelation,—  
''Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear My voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with Me'' (Rev. 3:20, K.J.V.),—is not only the voice of Jesus our Lord but also of our heavenly Father who has come to us. This is also the merciful call of our Father that was heard by Adam His first fallen son after his transgression. ''The Lord God called to the man, and said to him, 'Where are you?''' (Gen. 3:9). He is also seeking for us today with the same call.

I remember a story of the President Eisenhower in America. One morning he was reading a newspaper, in which an article moved the heart of the President. It appeared that there was a little boy called Henry who was about to die of lung cancer, and as people around him asked of his desire, he answered, ''My last desire is to see my dear President Eisenhower just once.'' No sooner had he read this article than he abandoned his busy official duties and ran out of the White House and drove through cities and street and back streets toward Henry's home in order to fulfill his last desire; and knocked at the door. And his father shouted hastily, who had been greatly distressed with his dying son,

''Who is ringing my doorbell at such an early hour?'' And the President rang the doorbell again. And Henry's father shouted with abusive language toward him. But he, in gentle voice, said, ''Would you please let me in?'' Henry's dad in pajamas and with the angry face came out and opened the door, shouting,

''Don't you have any manners?''  
''I am sorry, I came to see your son after reading the morning paper.''

If a king of this cold, wicked world stooped himself to satisfy a little boy's desire, disregarding all his important business matters and such insults, how much more should our heavenly Father, who has begotten and brought us up, come and knock earnestly at the door of His perishing children's heart?

Dear brethren and sisters! Let us not treat our loving heavenly Father, the merciful President of the universe as Henry's dad did, but run out with joyful shout and welcome Him who has abandoned all heaven to come down to this earth just to see us, and receive Him forever as our personal Father.

He alone is our everlasting life, joy, love, happiness, and our Friend.

Praise the Lord, and glory to our real Father who has come to abide with us!

## 16. Our Real Father Who Resurrects Us and Gives Us Eternal Life

"God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son," and His purpose was "whosoever believeth in Him should not perish but have everlasting life" (John 3:16, K.J.V.).

Eternal life is that "which God, who never lies, promised ages ago" (Titus 1:2). "For He will render to every man according to his works: to those who by patience in well-dong seek for glory and honour and immortality, He will give eternal life" (Rom. 2:6,7). "that whoever believes in Him (Jesus) may have eternal life" (John 3:15).

Therefore to those who follow the devil and live a sinful life He will repay them with "death, the wages of sin," and to those who obey God and believe and follow Jesus whom He has sent He will recompense with "eternal life, the free gift of God in Christ Jesus" (Rom. 6:23).

Therefore eternal life is our Father's precious gift for His fallen children on earth. "For as the Father has eternal life in Himself, so He has granted the Son also to have life (everlasting) in Himself" (John 5:26). "Thou hast given Him (the Son) power over all flesh, to give eternal life to all whom Thou hast given Him (the Son)" (John 17:2).

Therefore whoever wants may have eternal life freely

from God, from the Son, or from the Holy Spirit. This eternal life is that which "God, who never lies, promised ages ago," because He loved the earthly sinners so much "that He gave His only begotten Son"; "this is not your own, ... it is the gift of God" (Titus 1:2, John 3:16, Eph. 2:8).

Now let us learn of our Father from the Bible as One who raises up His children on earth who have died in Christ and brings the light of resurrection to them.

"Now if Christ is preached as raised from the dead" ... it is "because we testified of God that He raised Christ" (1 Cor. 15:12, 15). He "gives life to the dead and calls into existence the things that do not exist" (Rom. 4:17). "If the Spirit of Him who raised Jesus from the dead dwells in you, He who raised Christ Jesus from the dead will give life to your mortal bodies also" (Rom 8:11). He "did not raise" Christ "if it is true that the dead are not raised" (1 Cor. 15:15) "If Christ has not been raised, your faith is futile and you are still in your sins. Then those also who have fallen asleep in Christ have perished" (1 Cor. 15:17, 18). But as it is evidently testified, "God raised the Lord Jesus and will also raise us up by His power" (1 Cor. 6:14).

"He delivered us from so deadly a peril, and He will deliver us" (2 Cor. 1:10). "And you He made alive, when you were dead through the trespasses and sins" (Eph. 2:1).

And as the Father gave His Son the power to give eternal life, He also gave Him the power of resurrection that He might raise up His mortal children fallen

in deadly sleep in the world. Jesus said, "Verily, verily, I say unto you. The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live." "And shall come forth: they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation" (John 5:25,29, K.J.V.).

"Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies and God of all comfort, who comforts us in all our affliction, " "who is rich in mercy out of the great love with which He loved us, even when we were dead through our trespasses, made us alive together with Christ, ... and raised us up with Him, and made us sit with Him in the heavenly places in Christ Jesus, that in the coming ages He might show the immeasurable riches of His grace in darkness toward us in Christ Jesus... This is not your own... It is the gift of God" (2 Cor. 1:3,4, Eph. 2:4-8).

"Blessed be the God, the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ," our Father in heaven! He loved this sinner so much "that He gave His only begotten Son". He remembered this corruptible, mortal body and raised me up, and gave me eternal life, and made me sit with Jesus in heavenly places. How can I praise Him for all these blessings! All I can say to Him with my little lips is "My dear Father! My dear Father! My dear Father!....."

REV. 5 :

## 17. Our Real Father Who Weeps in the Judgment Seat

"As I looked, thrones were placed and One that was ancient of days took His seat; His raiment was white as snow, and the hair of His head like pure wool; His throne was fiery flames, its wheels were burning fire. A stream of fire issued and came forth from before Him: a thousand thousands served Him; and ten thousand times ten thousand stood before Him: the court sat in judgement, and the books were opened" (Dan. 7:9,10).

"And I saw the dead, great and small, standing before the throne, and books were opened. Also another book was opened, which is the book of life. And the dead were judged by what was written in the books, by what they had done." "Then the kings of the earth and the great men and the generals and the rich and the strong, and every one, slave and free, " all were summoned before the throne (Rev. 20:12, 6:15).

What an appalling and dreadful scene of the great Judgment day of the universe! I was heard that in the courts of the world when the judge asks the convict of his address with a loud voice, he is so shaken up with terror that he cannot even utter one word. Then who can dare stand without horror and fear in the great judgment hall of the universe in which the King of



the universe, the Lord of lords, the God of heaven takes His seat?

The seat of the Supreme Judge is not like those of the lifeless thrones of kings and judges of the world: it is a living seat, moving with animation praising God and also speaking on its own, which now appeared before all the righteous and sinners of the whole world.

And the fiery flames coming forth from it is so exceedingly hot and dreadful that it can consume and melt the whole world, and no power of man or science can extinguish it. It "came forth from before Him." The attendants of the Supreme Judge were a thousand thousands and ten thousand times ten thousand standing before Him: and speaking of their power and might, just one angel once came down and slew one hundred and eighty five thousand mighty men of Assyrian army overnight that wielded power all over the world at that time. Those beings of such tremendous power and might are the heavenly hosts of the Lord, His civil and military officials. They are now standing as eyewitnesses to every act of Satan and his agents and all sinners of the world.

And there is standing, in this great judgment hall, a Lawyer (Advocate), who once, as the Son of God, abandoned heaven and came down to be slain on the cross for sinners—Jesus Christ. "If any one does sin, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous" (1 John 2:1). "He is able for all time to save those who draw near to God through Him, since He

always lives to make intercession for them" (Heb. 7:25).

Jesus Christ is the unique Lawyer in this Heavenly Court of the universe who can plead for sinners, saying, "This man is innocent. He is a righteous man. He has cleansed himself through My blood. He is fit for heaven." This Lawyer's pleading is so trustworthy and truthful that it is perfectly accepted to the Supreme Judge. Blessed are those for whom He pleads.

Now in this appalling and dreadful court of the universe which man cannot describe or bear the sight of, the Supreme Judge of the Universe sitting on the throne of fiery flame, begins to speak toward the "kings of the earth and the great men and the generals and the rich and the strong, and everyone, slave and free." Satan the instigator of these and his agents, everyone trembling with dark faces. "Behold, it is written before Me: I will not keep silent, but I will repay, yea, I will repay into their bosom their iniquities and their fathers' iniquities together, says the Lord; because they burned incense upon the mountains and reviled Me upon the hills, I will measure into their bosom payment for their former doings." (Isa. 65:6, 7)

In the courtrooms of this world, the charges are judged according to the severity of the crime, but in the heavenly court, trial begins by strict investigation of the motives that had been held in mind before the crime was originated, and all the secret purposes and motives that have been held throughout the lifetime,

all the thoughts, every wrong word, every deed, all the hidden selfishness, every unjust account and every unfair dealing, unfulfilled duties to their fellow men, wasted moments, every negligence, heaven-sent warnings or reproofs neglected, unimproved opportunities, forgetfulness of Saviour's claims, how often they were given to Satan the time, thought and strength that belong to God, and every thought, however small, that flashed upon the mind, that may be forgotten by us, all of these sins are faithfully recorded in the book. Moreover, all sins that may have been committed if opportunity had permitted, absorption in the acquisition of worldly possessions or the enjoyment of earthly pleasures, the influence exerted for evil with its far-reaching results, are all passed in review before God and strictly investigated and judged for either faithfulness or unfaithfulness. The Supreme Judge of the universe is never deceived by appearances of piety of hypocrites. Beginning with those who lived first upon the earth, cases of each successive generation are presented, closing with the living. Every name is mentioned, every case closely investigated. Names are accepted, names rejected. The mightiest conquerer upon the earth cannot call back the record of even a single day. Our acts, our words, even our most secret motives, all have their weight in deciding our destiny for weal and woe. Though they may be forgotten by us, they will bear their testimony to justify or condemn. That is why Jesus said, "If your right eye causes you

to sin, pluck it out and throw it away; it is better that you lose one of your members than that your whole body be thrown into hell. And if your right hand causes you to sin, cut it off and throw it away; it is better that you lose one of your members than that your whole body go into hell" (Matt. 5:29,30).

On the other hand, the Supreme Judge of the universe has another book in which are accurately recorded the good deeds of His people, "Then those who feared the Lord spoke with one another; the Lord heeded and heard them and a book of remembrance was written before Him of those who feared the Lord and thought on His name" (Mal. 3:16).

In this book of life are written all good deeds of those who honor Him and think upon His name, and every act of charity that may not have been known to others nor rewarded during their lifetime. To list them, they are as follows; every good purpose, motive and thought of faith, every good word, every evil overcome and every temptation resisted, all the acts of love and good deeds, every word of tender pity expressed, every act of sacrifice that is not made known to others, every suffering and sorrow endured for the sake of God and Christ, the influence exerted for good, with its far-reaching results, faithful and sincere acts, all the persecutions, insults, contempts, scornful treatments received until the final moments and martyrdom, are all faithfully recorded. "And whoever gives to one of these little ones a cup of cold water, ... truly, I say to you, he shall not lose his reward" (Matt. 10:42).

“For God will bring every deed into judgement, with every secret thing, whether good or evil” (Eccles. 12:14). In the Supreme Judgement Hall of Justice everything is judged according to the great principle of heaven—“reap as sown.” “So each of us shall give account of himself to God” (Rom. 14:12). “For whatever a man sows, that he will also reap” (Gal. 6:7). “Those who have done good” are judged good and receive great reward and eternal life, and “those who have done evil” reap punishment and death. And everyone who has existed on earth should settle all accounts of what he has sown throughout his life. We are grateful to the Supreme Judge of the universe that there is no misjudgement, partiality, taking bribes, or injustice with Him contrary to unjust human judges on this earth. “Now then, let the fear of the Lord be upon you; take heed what you do, for there is no perversion of justice with the Lord our God, or partiality, or taking bribes” (2 Chro. 19:7).

Now the Supreme Judge of the universe, the Lord living God, sitting above all chief judges is speaking toward all judges of the world today. “Woe to those who are heroes at drinking wine, and valiant men in mixing strong drink, who acquit the guilty for a bribe, and deprive the innocent of his right!” “Cursed be he who takes a bribe to slay an innocent person.” “Behold, it is written before Me, I will not keep silent, but I will repay, yea, I will repay into their bosom” (Isa. 5:22,23, Deut. 27:25, Isa. 65:6). But “he who walks righteously and speaks uprightly, who despises

the gain of oppressions, who shakes his hands, lest they hold a bribe, who stops his ears from hearing of bloodshed and shuts his eyes from looking upon evil, he will dwell in the heights; his place of defense will be the fortress of rocks; his bread will be given him, his water will be sure. Your eyes will see” God, “the King in His beauty;... and will behold a land (heaven) that stretches afar” (Isa. 33:15,17).

### \* The Joyful Day of Judgment

“As he (Paul) argued about... future judgement, Felix was alarmed and said, ‘Go away for the present’” (Acts 24:25). “When the disciples heard this they were greatly astonished, saying, ‘Who then can be saved?’” (Matt. 19:25).

Today when all the brethren in the world hear about the future judgment, whether they serve God or not, they all say in fear with one voice, “What shall we do?” (Acts 2:37) as the governor Felix who did not serve God and the disciples who served Him equally feared. But we in this age are to know the true meaning of what Jesus said—“God sent not His son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved” (John 3:17, K.J.V.).

In the peaceful universe in the beginning there had been not one who had known or heard the word judgment. “It was when Satan the outrageous one



in the universe rebelled against God and broke the peace and order of the universe by killing and injuring precious lives of numerous angels and men, that the new word 'judgment' began to be introduced.

God has two purposes in judgment. One is to protect and promote the lives and happiness of His children who willingly obey the laws and rules that He has set up for order and happiness of the universe, and the other is to eradicate the evil ones who break the order and laws of the universe and constantly commit murder and robbery, that He may wipe away the evil ones and restore the everlasting peace and order of the universe.

Since the rebellion of Satan, a division forces has taken place in the universe, and those who obey and observe the law of God and His order have been the object of hatred and abhorrence of Satan and his agents, and a great number of them have been persecuted and murdered by the hands of the evil.

But our Father who is "merciful and gracious, longsuffering, and abundant in goodness and truth" (Ex. 34:6), who has kept His patience thus far will cease His longsuffering and stand up to execute judgment between good and evil, and between the righteous and the wicked. There has never been a previous event of judgment in this universe since the beginning nor will there ever be one in the future. After this unique judgment is over, there will never again be another mention of its word and it will be forever forgotten in our

peaceful kingdom of the universe. And all heavenly beings will enjoy the order, peace, and happiness forever that the Father restored for them.

Now His primary purpose for judgment is to unravel the true fact of His children who have been dragged by the wicked without sin, disgraced and condemned without a definite charge, persecuted, imprisoned, beaten, stabbed and thrust with a spear to death, and burned at the stake under false accusations for the reason that they love God and obey His commandments. He will expose their tearful appeal before the whole world and the universe and give them great reward and blessing.

Therefore Jesus, when He was on earth, said, "Do not fear those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul: rather fear him who can destroy both soul and body in hell." "In the world ye shall have tribulations" but "let not your heart be troubled." "Will not God vindicate His elect, who cry to Him day and night? Will He delay long over them? I tell you, He will vindicate them speedily" (Matt. 10:28, John 16:33, 14:1, Luke 18:7,8).

In Revelation is also well described the scenes of the saints slain by the enemies under false charge, entreating to the Father of heaven. "When He opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of those who had been slain for the word of God and for the witness they had borne; they cried out with a loud voice, 'O Sovereign Lord, holy and true, how long



before thou wilt judge and avenge our blood on those (the wicked) who dwell upon the earth?... (Rev. 6:9,10). And the merciful Father, the Sovereign Lord in compassion gave each one of them "a white robe and told to rest a little longer until the number of their fellow servants and their brethren should be complete, who were to be killed as they themselves had been" (Rev. 6:11). Now as the number of His saints are complete and His call for his rebellious children to return that has lasted thousands of years is ceased, our heavenly Father stands up to begin His final judgment in answer to the prayer of His victimized children. Therefore however dreadful the scene of the courtroom may be, and however numerous specification of the charges may be, God's children should rejoice with happiness, who obey His word and commandments,—the basis for heaven's order and welfare.—and have been forgiven of their iniquity and transgression and sin by His wonderful grace and the precious blood of His Son; for it will be a day of vengeance to the wicked while it will be a day of great reward and glory before the whole universe, for those who obey Him.

On the other hand, those who persecuted the saints who loved His words and commandments more than their own lives will stand before the throne, both great and small, and books will be opened which contain every record of their evil deeds that they have committed while they were alive, and they will be judged by what is written in the books (Rev. 20:12). "And the

sea gave up the dead in it, Death and Hades gave up the dead in them, and all" who had persecuted the saints "were judged by what they had done. Then Death and Hades were thrown into the lake of fire. This is the second death, the lake of fire; and if any one's name was not found written in the book of life, he was thrown into the lake of fire" (Rev. 20:13-15).

Now at last the outrageous Satan and his agents who have been devoting themselves to tempting others, fraud, robbery, and murder for such a long period of time in the universe have been wiped out forever by our heavenly Father's fair judgment. The horrible, great controversy between good and evil has ceased and the peace of the universe is recovered. And all heavenly beings, angels, and all the creatures that have been watching our Fathers impartial judgment from the beginning to the end are filled with admiration, and with one accord, give gratitude, praise, reverence, and glory to Him for His longsuffering, mercy, love, and fair judgment to the good and the wicked.

O Sovereign Lord, our holy and true Father, "justice and judgement are the habitation of Thy throne; mercy and truth shall go before Thy face" (Ps. 89:14, K.J.V.).

"And I heard the angel of the waters say, 'Thou art righteous. O Lord, which art, and wast, and shalt be, because Thou hast judged thus. For they have shed the blood of saints and prophets,... for they are worthy'" (Rev. 16:5,6, K.J.V.).

"And I heard the altar cry, 'Yea, Lord God the

Almighty, true and just are Thy judgements!'” (Rev. 16:7).

“And I heard every creature in heaven and on earth and under the earth and in the sea, and all therein, saying, ‘To Him who sits upon the throne and to the Lamb be blessing and honour and glory and might forever and ever!’ And the four living creatures said, ‘Amen!’ and the elders fell down and worshipped” (Rev. 5:13,14).

“And I saw... those who had conquered the beast and its image and the number of its name... saying, ‘Great and wonderful are Thy deeds, O Lord God the Almighty!’ Just and true are Thy ways, O King of the ages... For Thou alone art holy. All nations shall come and worship Thee, for Thy judgements have been revealed” (Rev. 15:2-4).

Rejoice you, my brethren that weep now on earth. Sing with joy you my brethren and sisters who worry over the word of the Lord.

Sing with joy you my brethren and sisters who are persecuted for keeping His commandment.

Sing the song of triumph you that have forsaken the glories of the world. You that are falsely accused of now, praise God for His righteousness.

You that are now dragged to be baptized of blood, behold Him sitting on His judgment seat in heaven, for He will exalt highly your sorrow and unfair suffering and loyalty before the whole universe and recompense you with great reward.

But.

You that commit evil today, be dreaded.

You that defy against God, be startled.

You that afflict His saints, be sorrowful.

You that persecute His saints, be mournful.

You that kill the saints, throw yourself down on your knees and wail, for He will come and judge you by

His law of justice and throw you into fire.

Thus the great controversy between good and evil has finally ended. Satan and sinners and all sins have already vanished. The whole universe has become clean. The throb of joy and harmony of all creatures echoes throughout the whole universe. Light, life, and joy issuing from God extends to the endless space. From a particle of atom to the great world, all creature animate or inanimate, exclaim, in their untainted beauty and perfect joy, that God is love.

### \* Our Father Wailing in His Judgment Seat

Let me draw a conclusion by raising a question to you my grateful readers. Our Father, longsuffering and slow to anger, by His judgment of justice, has thrown into the fire Satan and his angels and innumerable wicked ones who had rebelled against Him, killed His only Son, and destroyed His innumerable children. Now how do you think He feels in His heart? Shall He feel refreshed and gratified? Or would He feel otherwise?

Most of the answers that I have heard so far were “He must feel refreshed and relieved.”

When I was a junior high school student when still being an unbeliever we had a teacher, who won respects from all students: he was as friendly to us as a father. In contrast with his muscular and dreadful appearance he was very gentle and compassionate to all students: he used to advise and counsel and instruct us with love as if we had been his real children. He was a teacher in charge of training discipline in school, but no one who were punished by him assumed attitude of defiance or vengeance toward him in contrast to other teachers. He was also an energetic person and a man of integrity, who cultivated a big rice field before and after school every morning and evening. He used to say, "Even if I reach 60, I will never look old." We all believed his word for he had such a healthy and strong body. And after years as we became dignified youths in the community, an unbelievable news was heard, that he had already died. We were seized with such a great sorrow as if we had lost our real parents or close relatives: because it was totally beyond our expectations for someone so nice and strong, whom we thought would never grow old even at the age of 60, to die so suddenly. Frightened as we were, we with one accord inquired the reason: and it was that he had a son that he had brought up with total mental, physical sacrifice with the highest hope and expectation and sent him to Seoul to study in order to make him a great man. But having neglected his study there he became involved with a girl friend, but when his love had been

rejected by her he returned to his boarding room and committed suicide by taking poison. No sooner had he (the father) heard this news than he came up to Seoul, to his boarding room and opened the door. His son whom he had brought up with all the sacrifices and love, and afforded him to study abroad to make him great, was now lying down as a cold dead body. What a deplorable scene it was! Now the father dragged out the dead body of his son and loaded on a vehicle and went not to his hometown but to the crematorium to burn it to ashes. He handed the dead body to the cremator, and after receiving the ashes, he went to the river, and sprinkled it on the water saying, "I was cheated by this boy. I was cheated by this boy." But who could have imagined that it was his last word? Immediately he came down to his home and began to do nothing but drinking; and no matter how strong a man he might have been, how could have his body sustained it? As we heard this story, we did not know what to say. Only a sorrowful regret remained in my heart that if he had believed in God and brought him up in His way, he could have avoided this tragedy.

Now back to the story of our heavenly Father; all the evil angels and innumerable wicked ones that were thrown into the lake of fire were also His own children that He Himself had begotten and raised. They were just as real children as we are, on whom our Father had had greatest expectation and desire and for whom He had poured out His greatest love and sacrifice. In



order that He might make these children come back, how persistently He had kept pleading to them! How much tears He had shed! And how much He had cared for them! It was for them that He gave His only Son; that is why He could not allow Himself to open the trial upon them, but delayed it for six thousand years. Parental love for children, whether it is of God or of man makes them faint-hearted and grievous at bereavement. If the dry-hearted human father felt so tormenting sorrow as to give up his own life as he was disposing with his hands the dead body of his own son who had betrayed him, how could our heavenly Father full of mercy and love pronounce death sentence to His own children whom He had begotten and raised, with His own lips before all the universe, no matter how righteous the law of heaven might be? The agony and torment are beyond our imagination. Moreover, how much more painful and loathsome for Him to carry out execution upon His children whom He Himself had sentenced with His lips! This is something even human parents cannot easily do. If the evil human parent, who had lost just one out of many children, followed him to death, who is able to describe the heart of our heavenly Father or comfort Him who has lost almost all His children in the fire but few?

Now I would like to ask a question to every parent in this world—who can dare sentence his own child to death with his own mouth and execute it with his own hands?

If the evil, vicious human parents of earth cannot dare sentence to death or execute it to even one of their children, how could our heavenly Father full of love give up His innumerable children into destruction mercilessly? In His heart of infinite love has thus been made a great hole after the judgment that neither man nor angels can comprehend. Now, behold the great hole in the heart of our heavenly Father, you all mankind of the earth, all angels of heaven, and all evil angels that were driven out from heaven into this earth, and listen to His voice of sigh, "I've been cheated! I've been cheated!" Do you not hear the quivering voice from His mouth?

Wail you, O heaven, all the earth, and all the inhabitants of the universe! Wail for our Father's sorrow! Wail for His wounded, broken, ruptured heart! Wail for Him who has lost all His children but a few! That is why He has delayed the day of judgment for six thousand years, and His steps toward the seat of judgment was so heavy and staggering. And His bloodshedding agony and sorrow that pierced His heart as He was weeping on His judgment seat neither heaven nor angels, nor any one can penetrate its depth.

Dear brethren and sisters of all the human race! From now on what sort of life would you like to live? Would you like to broaden the great hole of His heart who has loved you so much? Or become His good sons and daughters who practice filial piety toward Him by living true and virtuous life and fill His vacant heart? This is your unique right of decision that no one but you can exercise.



Our heavenly Father's tearful call for us is still echoing vividly today.—

“Turn, O backsliding children” (Jer. 3:14, K.J.V.).  
 “Return, ye backsliding children, and I will heal your backslidings” (Jer. 3:22, K.J.V.). “Come... before you are driven away like the drifting chaff, before there comes upon you the fierce anger of the Lord” (Zeph. 2:1, 2).

“How can I give you up, O Ephraim! How can I hand you over, O Israel!... My heart recoils within Me. My compassion grows warm and tender” (Hosea 11:8).

“Come now let us reason together.... though your sins are like scarlet, they shall be as snow; though they are red like crimson, they shall become like wool” (Isa. 1:18). “I, I am He who blots out your transgressions for My sake, and I will not remember your sins” (Isa. 43:25).

“I have swept away your transgressions like a cloud, and your sins like mist; return to Me, for I have redeemed you” (Isa. 44:22).

“As I live, says the Lord God, I have no pleasure in the death of the wicked, but that the wicked turn from his way and live; turn back, turn back from your evil ways: for why will you die, O house of Israel?” (Ezek. 33:11)

“For a brief moment I forsook you, but with great compassion I will gather you. In overflowing wrath for a moment I hid My face from you, but with everlasting love I will have compassion on you, says the Lord your Redeemer” (Isa. 54:7, 8).

—Hymn—

1. Come home! Come home! You are weary at heart,  
 For the way has been dark, and so lonely and wild;  
 (Refrain): O prodigal child! Come home! Home! Oh  
 come home!
- Come home! Come, O come home!
2. Come home! Come home! For we watch and we  
 wait,  
 And we stand at the gate, while the shadows are  
 piled;
3. Come home! Come home! From the sorrow and  
 blame,  
 From the sin and the shame, and the tempter that  
 smiled.
4. Come home! Come home! There is bread and to  
 spare,  
 And a warm welcome there, Then, to friend  
 reconciled.

## 18. Our Real Father Who Disciplines Us

“God dealeth with you as with sons: for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not? But if ye be without chastisement, where of all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sons.” (Heb. 12:7,8, K.J.V.)

The Lord God in heaven is our real Father who has begotten us and given us all good things in heaven and earth, and we are His loving and proud children. As the parents on earth frequently counsel and advise their children and sometimes punish with a rod, although they are fine enough to receive respect and praise from neighbors and society, in order that they may become finer and nobler figures in society, so does our loving, merciful Father often counsels and reproves us and sometimes uses a rod of love that He may make us more perfect and holy and honorable children of His. He knows each one's mind and personality better than anyone does. He is especially familiar with all the strengths and weaknesses of our physical as well as characteristic traits, and while He praises and cultivates our good traits, He uses various means to remove the evil traits, giving admonitions, reproofs, and even chastens with a rod. What a deep concern and thorough care He bestows upon us! He is not a foster or step Father to us. He is not the kind of father merely in written form of document or from the nature of things, who is not concerned about our prosperity and

adversity, or welfare and calamity. He is our real Father who has borne us through His Creator's womb. He has not only borne us Himself but also delivered us when we had been ready to die in the pit of the enemy by paying infinite price, sacrifice, and agony. So priceless and precious as we are in His sight, how could He become indifferent to us that we should go astray? No, never. Rather He says, “I will be his Father, and he shall be My son. When he commits iniquity I will chasten him with the rod of men, with the stripes of the sons of men; but I will not take My steadfast love from him.” (2 Sam. 7:14,15)

“If his children forsake My law and do not walk according to My ordinances... violate My statutes and do not keep My commandments, then I will punish their transgression with the rod and their iniquity with scourges; but I will not remove from him My steadfast love, or be false to My faithfulness.” (Ps. 89:30-33)

Solomon also says, “My son, do not despise the Lord's discipline or be weary of His reproof, for the Lord reproves him whom He loves, as a father the son in whom he delights.” (Pro. 3:11,12)

Moses also says, “Know then in your heart that, as a man disciplines his son, the Lord your God disciplines you. So you shall keep the commandments of the Lord your God, by walking in His ways and by fearing Him.” It is “that He might humble you and test you, to do you good in the end” (Deut. 8:5,6,16). The Scripture says, “Behold, happy is the man whom

God reproves: therefore despise not the chastening of the Almighty. For He wounds, but He binds up; He smites, but His hands heal. . . . As a father pities his children, so the Lord pities those who fear Him" (Job 5:17, 18, Ps. 103:13).

Paul also says, "Besides this, we have had earthly fathers to discipline us and we respected them. Shall we not much more be subject to the Father of spirits and live? For they disciplined us for a short time at their pleasure, but He disciplines us for our good, that we may share His holiness. For the moment all discipline seems painful rather than pleasant; later it yields the peaceful fruit of righteousness to those who have been trained by it" (Heb. 12:9-11).

The Holy Spirit says, "My son, do not regard lightly the discipline of the Lord, nor lose courage when you are punished by Him. For the Lord disciplines him whom He loves, and chastises every son whom He receives. It is for discipline that you have to endure. God is treating you as sons; for what son is there whom his father does not discipline? If you are left without discipline, in which all have participated, then you are illegitimate children and not sons" (Heb. 12:5-8). Therefore "heed the rod and the One who appointed it" (Micah 6:9, N.I.V.). And "the light of the moon will be as the light of the sun, and the light of the sun will be sevenfold, as the light of seven days, in the day when the Lord binds up the hurt of His people, and heals the wounds inflicted by His blow" (Isa. 30:26).

Dear brethren and sisters!  
 Our Father permits trials in order that we may be cleansed from earthliness, from selfishness, from harsh, unchristlike traits of character. He suffers the deep waters of affliction to go over our souls in order that we may know Him and Jesus Christ whom He has sent, in order that we may have deep heart longings to be cleansed from defilement, and may come forth from the trials purer, holier, nobler, happier. Often we enter the furnace of trial with our souls darkened with selfishness; but if patient under the crucial test, we shall come forth reflecting the divine character. When His purpose in the affliction is accomplished, the promise—"He shall bring forth thy righteousness as the light, and thy judgement as the noonday" (Ps. 37:6)—will be fulfilled.

Praise the Lord! Glory to our real Father who chastens us with love everyday that we may become perfect and fit for heaven!  
 Praise the Lord!

## **19. Our Real Father Who Has Given Us His Throne**

“To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with Me in My throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with My Father in His throne” (Rev. 3:21, K.J.V.).

The Monarch of heaven, our Father “hath highly exalted Him (Jesus)” (Phi. 2:9) who has overcome Satan the king of darkness and his angels and “set Him on His right throne” (Mark 16:19), on which He is also set down today. And He comforted Him saying, “Sit Thou on My right hand, till I make Thine enemies Thy footstool” (Matt. 22:44, K.J.V.), and also determined “that at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, in heaven and on earth and under the earth, and every tongue confess that Jesus Christ is Lord” (Phi. 2:10,11).

Jesus is exclaiming to us, “To him that overcomes Satan as I overcame him, I will grant to sit with Me even as I overcame and set down with My Father in His throne” (Rev. 3:21). In this way as He bestowed His throne upon Jesus His Eldest Son, He also bestows it upon us His last born children. It is an unquestionable truth, for earlier chosen group of sinners are already sitting on His throne today.

John the witness testifies, “Lo, the throne stood in heaven, ... and seated on the thrones were twenty-four elders, clad in white garments, with golden crowns upon their heads” (Rev. 4:2,4).

What an amazing love it is! How can He love sinners so much as to give them His throne, which is all that is left of Him! What a wondrous love it is! This infinite love “which surpasses our knowledge” (Eph. 3:18), this is a mystery of which we shall never attain to full understanding throughout eternal ages.

John the witness testifies again, “Then I saw thrones, ... and the souls of those who had been beheaded for their testimony of Jesus and for the word of God, and who had not worshipped the beast or its image and had not received its mark on their foreheads or their hands. They came to life, and reigned with Christ” (Rev. 20:4).

What a glorious scene it is! Those who had been slain for God and Jesus are now in heaven reigning on His throne. This is the throne, glorious and highest, “above the stars of God,” which is “upon the mount of congregation, in the side of the north,” and is “above the heights of the clouds, ... of the Most High,” that Satan, “the son of the morning,” once attempted to plunder by force and instigation but failed, to be fallen to the earth himself (Isa. 14:12-14).

The throne that Satan the instigator of the whole world had failed to plunder by his cunning skill, our Father has bestowed freely upon us, His lowly and humble children on earth who love Him genuinely and obey His word and commandments. That is why the righteous man Moses continued to love God, rejecting Pharaoh's throne as worthless, beholding the recompense of the reward, (Heb. 11:24-26) and so did



apostle Paul threw away all the worldly status and glory like dirt and said, "Brethren, . . . this one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which are before, I press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus" (Phi. 3:13,14). "Neither count I my life dear unto myself, so that I might finish my course with joy, and the ministry, which I have received of the Lord Jesus, to testify the gospel of the grace of God" (Acts 20:24).

What a sensible and wise choice they have made! Should we not likewise choose to lead such a wise and prudent life which has been given but once? How numerous there have been who had sought for worldly, perishable and corruptible thrones and glories, instead of heaven's most glorious throne and died away! Billions of God's children today are still absorbed in vain glories of the world and are losing precious opportunities given which come never but once.

But the King of heaven, our Father is still sending His invitation. "And sent forth His servants. . . . Come. . . everything is ready, come" (Matt. 22:1-9). Jesus is also exclaiming, "Truly, I say to you, in the new world, when the Son of man shall sit on His (Father's) glorious throne, you who have followed Me will also sit on twelve thrones" enjoying glories, "and shall reign forever and ever" (Matt. 19:28, Rev. 22:5).

Praise the Lord! Glory to God our real Father forever and ever, who has unsparingly given away His throne to us! Praise the Lord!

## **20. Our Real Father Who Has Given Us His Royal Authority**

"Do ye not know that the saints shall judge the world? . . . Know ye not that we shall judge angels?" (1 Cor. 6:2,3, K.J.V.). We know that in ancient times in many nations only kings had the authority to execute the judgment of matters involving people's life and death. Likewise in heavenly kingdom life or death of angels and men depends upon the hand of the Only King, our Father, the Monarch of heaven. But He has empowered His specially appointed ones to judge all heaven and earth in His place—first to Jesus Christ His firstborn Son, and second to us His second sons.

"The Father . . . has given all judgement to the Son" (John 5:22),—this is the first appointee. And, "Jesus said to them, 'Truly, I say to you, . . . you who have followed Me will also sit on twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel'" (Matt. 19:28),—these are the second appointees to whom He has given His royal authority. The apostle John witnessed them in heaven and testified, "I saw thrones, and seated on them were those to whom judgement was committed, . . . who had been beheaded for their testimony to Jesus and for the word of God, and who had not worshipped the beast or its image and had not received its mark on their foreheads or their hands. They came to life, and reigned with Christ a thousand years" (Rev. 20:4).

Therefore the apostle Paul said, "Do ye not know that the saints shall judge the world? ... Know ye not that we shall judge angels?" (1 Cor. 6:2,3, K.J.V.). This is the royal authority of the King of the universe, the Lord of hosts, that He Himself has bestowed upon His children who had once fallen to this earth. This is the power which He has never given to anyone including the heavenly angels, or anyone above or under the heaven but to Jesus and us.

Now Satan and his angels and all the wicked ones who have so persistently pursued, tormented, persecuted, and killed His children on earth shall be judged by these children of God who are as gentle as a lamb to whom God gave power to judge all the world.

"But the meek shall possess the land, and delight themselves in abundant prosperity. The wicked plots against the righteous, and gnashes his teeth at him; but the Lord laughs at the wicked, for He sees that his day is coming." when the righteous shall judge the wicked (Ps. 37:11-13).

What a great love He pours upon us to exalt us so high!

"As for the saints in the land, they are the noble" (Ps. 16:3) who have become acting judges for God, who have received the power of God to judge "the spiritual wickedness in high places and the rulers of darkness of this world." (Eph. 6:12, K.J.V.) that is "the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chief captains, and the mighty men, and every

bond man, and every free man" (Rev. 6:15, K.J.V.).

Therefore, you children of God gentle as an innocent lamb, who are facing and enduring persecutions and fierce trials, "delight thyself also in the Lord; and He shall give thee the desires of thine heart. Commit thy way unto the Lord; trust also in Him; and He shall bring it to pass. And He shall bring forth thy righteousness as the light, and thy judgement as the noonday. Rest in the Lord, and wait patiently for Him; fret not thyself ... because of the man who bringeth wicked devices to pass. Cease from anger; and forsake wrath: fret not thyself in any wise to do evil. For evil doers shall be cut off; but those that wait upon the Lord, they shall inherit the earth. For yet a little while, and the wicked shall not be: yea thou shalt diligently consider his place, and it shall not be. But the meek shall inherit the earth; and shall delight themselves in the abundance of peace. ... For the Lord loveth judgement, and forsaketh not His saints; they are preserved forever; but the seed of the wicked shall be cut off. The righteous shall inherit the land, and dwell therein forever" (Ps. 37:4-11,28,29, K.J.V.).

Praise the Lord! Praise and honor, glory and power and thanks be to God our real Father who loves His earthly humble children so much, and exalted them to His throne, and gave them His royal authority to execute judgment to all heaven and earth forever and ever! Praise the Lord!

## 21. Our Real Father Who Has Given Us His Kingdom

"Then shall the King say unto them on His right hand, 'Come, ye blessed of My Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world'" (Matt. 25:34).

This is what Jesus said when He came to the earth with Father's second request, to those who would be at the right hand when, "before Him will be gathered all the nations, and he will separate them one from another as a shepherd separates the sheep from the goats, and He will place the sheep at His right hand, but the goats at the left" (Matt. 25:32-34). He also said, "Seek first His (your Father's) kingdom" (Matt. 6:33). "Then the righteous will shine like the sun in the kingdom of their Father" (Matt. 13:43). The day of fulfillment of this word has already come.

Our Father of infinite love so loved His children who have been as obedient to His words and commandments as a lamb, and gave them eternal life, His throne, and His royal authority. Moreover, He has just sent to us a message through Christ His Eldest Son to inherit His Kingdom now, which is all that is left of Him.

O what a love! What a love of our Father this is! Our Father's unselfish love that any human mind and heart of selfishness and covetousness cannot understand nor comprehend its depth! I feel like putting down my pens to run away from here for I cannot find

the suitable language to describe this love: I just stand \*aghast at this indescribable love of God.

But while hearing the cries of my brethren wandering in the desolate world without the knowledge of His love, I cannot but keep on going.

Jesus said to His little flock who followed His word faithfully, "Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom" (Luke 12:32, K.J.V.). "I assign to you, as My Father assigned to Me, a kingdom, that you may... in My kingdom... sit on thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel" (Luke 22:29,30). "He who conquers and who keeps My works until the end, I will give him power over the nations... even as I Myself have received power from My Father" (Rev. 2:26,27). Therefore "seek first the kingdom of God and His righteousness" (Matt. 6:33). "Not every one who says to Me, 'Lord, Lord', shall enter the kingdom of heaven" (Matt. 7:21). But it will be "given to a nation producing the fruits of it" (Matt. 21:43). "The fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance" (Gal. 5:22,23). And "blessed are the poor in spirit," and "the persecuted for righteousness' sake, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven" (Matt. 5:3,10, K.J.V.).

"The saints of the most High shall take the kingdom, and possess the kingdom forever, even forever and ever" (Dan. 7:18, K.J.V.). Amen!

Praise the Lord! Glory to our real Father who has even given us His kingdom forever and ever!

## 22. Our Real Father Who Has Given Us an Everlasting Sign

"Remember the sabbath day, to keep it holy. Six days shalt thou labour, and do all thy work: but the seventh day is the sabbath of the Lord thy God: in it thou shalt not do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, thy manservant, nor thy maidservant, nor thy cattle, nor thy stranger that is within thy gates: for in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the Lord blessed the sabbath day, and hallowed it" (Ex. 20:8-11, K.J.V.).

### (1) The Foundation Day of the Universe

The Sabbath day is the foundation day of the universe on which He rested after He had made all things in heaven and earth and thus the birthday of all His creatures.

"Thus the heavens and the earth were finished, and all the host of them. And on the seventh day God ended His work which He had made. And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it: because that in it He had rested from all His work which God created and made" (Gen. 2:1-3, K.J.V.).

Every nation in the world has her own Foundation

Day, her birthday. This day of vital importance cannot be removed nor changed as long as the nation stands and not destroyed. Likewise, the seventh day of the week is the Foundation Day of the universe that the creator God has established in the beginning, that cannot be replaced nor abolished as long as the universe continues its existence.

Therefore Jesus said, "Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled" (Matt. 5:17, 18, K.J.V.). "In six days the Lord made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the Lord blessed the sabbath day, and hallowed it" (Ex. 20:10, 11, K.J.V.).

### (2) The Sacred Identification (Sign) of Heavenly People

Every nation has her peculiar identification card for every citizen. It is the unique sign that distinguishes her people from other peoples wherever they are in the world. Likewise, God in heaven has imparted to His people, His children a unique identification sign that the people of the world do not have: it is the holy Sabbath, a sign between God and His people.

"And the Lord spoke unto Moses, saying, Speak thou also unto the children of Israel, saying, Verily My Sabbath ye shall keep: for it is a sign between Me and you



throughout your generations, "... to be "a perpetual covenant. It is a sign between Me and the children of Israel forever" (Ex. 31:12,13,16,17, K.J.V.).

"Hallow My Sabbath; and they shall be a sign between Me and you, that ye may know that I am the Lord your God" (Ezek. 20:20, K.J.V.).

"Moreover also I gave them My Sabbath to be a sign between Me and them, that they might know that I am the Lord that sanctify them" (Ezek. 20:12, K.J.V.).

(3) The Day that God, Jesus, and Angels Keep

**\* God Keeps It**

Our heavenly Father has not only hallowed the seventh day to be the holy Sabbath but keeps it holy Himself.

"And on the seventh day God ended His work,.... and He rested on the seventh day ... In it He had rested from all His work which God created and made" (Gen. 2:2,3, K.J.V.).

"In six days the Lord made heaven and earth, and on the seventh day He rested, and was refreshed" (Ex. 31:17, K.J.V.).

He called it "My Sabbath" (Jer. 19:30), "My Sabbath" that I keep (ex. 31:13). He made it clear that this holy Sabbath is outside our authority right but solely within His authority power, saying, "It is 'My holy (Isa. 58:13, K.J.V.), 'holy Sabbath unto the Lord' (Ex. 16:23, K.J.V.) that I have established."

Today also in heaven He keeps it with His angelic host: He is truly 'Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last, "... with whom is no variableness; neither shadow of turning" (Rev. 22:13, James 1:17, K.J.V.).

"He that is entered into His rest, he also hath ceased from his own works, as God did from His" (Heb. 4:10, K.J.V.).

"Let us labour therefore to enter into that rest" (Heb. 4:11).

**\* Jesus Keeps It**

Our Lord Jesus the Son of God kept it and still keeps it today with His Father in heaven.

He said "This is the love of God, that we keep His commandment: and His commandments are not grievous" (1 John 5:3, K.J.V.). "If you keep My commandments, you will abide in My love, just as I have kept My Father's commandments and abide in His love" (John 15:10). "Think not that I have come to abolish the law and the prophets; I have come not to abolish them but to fulfil them" (Matt. 5:17).

In His life on earth He kept the Sabbath day holy in "the synagogue as His custom was" (Luke 4:16). The Scripture says that He kept the Sabbath day always "as His custom was," and after He had been crucified He rested on the Sabbath day in His tomb and rose up "very early on the first day of the week" (Mark 16:2,8,9.).

He still keeps it in heaven with His Father and angels, for "Jesus Christ is the same yesterday and today and forever" (Heb. 13:8). "Let us labour therefore to enter into that rest" (Heb. 4:11).

#### (4) The Disciples Kept It

As we look into the lives of the disciples after the crucifixion of their Master, we can see how thoroughly He had instructed them to keep the holy Sabbath as well as setting a example to them.

"It was the day of preparation, and the Sabbath was beginning. The women who had come with Him from Galilee followed, and saw the tomb, and how His body was laid; then they returned, and prepared spices and ointments. On the Sabbath they rested according to the commandment" (Luke 23:54-56).

"On the first day of the week, at early dawn, they went to the tomb, taking the spices which they had prepared... But they did not find the body" (Luke 24:1,3).

"And when the Sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James, and Salome, brought spices, so that they might go and anoint Him. And very early on the first day of the week they went to the tomb when the sun had risen. And they were saying to one another, 'Who will roll away the stone for us from the door of the tomb?'" (Mark 16:1-3).

Even in the hours of such deep sorrow they kept it as thoroughly as he had taught them.

"Be imitators of me, as I am of Christ" (1 Cor. 11:1), said the apostle Paul who also kept "the Sabbath days... as his manner was" (Acts 17:2, K.J.V.), as Jesus had kept it "as His custom was" (Luke 4:16).

#### (5) The Disciples in the Last Days Keep It

Jesus "the Lord of the Sabbath day" (Matt. 12:8) who had established Sabbath in the beginning with His Father commands us His last disciples to keep His holy Sabbath unto the end of the world. "Pray that your flight may not be in winter or on a Sabbath" (Matt. 24:20).

"For then there will be great tribulation, such as has not been from the beginning of the world until now, no, and never will be" (Matt. 24:21). "Be faithful unto death, and I will give you the crown of life" (Rev. 2:10).

"Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus" (Rev. 14:12, K.J.V.).

#### (6) The Only Identification Card for Reentrant to Heaven

"Thus says the Lord: take heed for the sake of your lives,.... and keep the Sabbath day holy, as I commanded your fathers" (Jer. 17:21,22).

"If thou turn away thy foot from the Sabbath, from doing thy pleasure on My holy day; and call the Sab-

bath a delight, the holy of the Lord, honourable: and shalt honour Him, not doing thine own ways, nor finding thine own pleasure, nor speaking thine own words: then shalt thou delight thyself in the Lord; and I will cause thee to ride upon the high places of the earth (heaven), and feed thee with the heritage of Jacob thy father: for the mouth of the Lord hath spoken it" (Isa. 58:13,14, K.J.V.).

"Thus says the Lord: keep justice, and do righteousness, for soon My salvation will come, and My deliverance be revealed. Blessed is the man who does this, and the son of man who holds it fast, who keeps the Sabbath, not profaning it, and keeps his hand from doing any evil... These I will bring to My holy mountain (heaven), and make them joyful in My house of prayer" (Isa. 56:1,2,7).

"Let not the foreigner who has joined himself to the Lord say, 'The Lord will surely separate me from His people'; and let not the eunuch say, 'Behold, I am a dry tree.' For thus says the Lord: To the eunuchs who keep My Sabbaths, who choose the things that please Me and hold fast My covenant, I will give in My house (heaven), and within My walls (new Jerusalem) a monument and a name better than sons and daughters; I will give them an everlasting name which shall not be cut off" (Isa. 56:3-5).

In <sup>the</sup> new heavens and the new earth which I will make... from Sabbath to Sabbath all flesh shall come to worship before Me, says the Lord" (Isa. 66:22,23)

(Cant. 1:14, 2:10, 2:11)

Dear brethren and sisters! What makes us hesitate? Let us join the holy day that God and Jesus, all angels and all heavenly beings observe in heaven. It is a festival day of heaven that God has kept from the beginning and Jesus kept on earth, and that we will keep forever with everlasting joy and happiness in the new paradise. He said that those who keep it holy, honorable on earth would enter heaven's eternal rest. I hope you all enter into the eternal rest of heaven beforehand here on earth.

"Therefore, while the promise of entering His rest remains, let us fear lest any of you be judged to have failed to reach it" (Heb. 4:1).

"Whoever enters God's rest also ceases from his labours as God did from his. Let us therefore strive to enter that rest, that no one fall by the same sort of disobedience" (Heb. 4:10,11).

"Today if ye will hear His voice, <sup>harden not your hearts</sup>" (Heb. 4:7).

Praise the Lord! Glory to our real Father who has given us His everlasting holy Sabbath in order that we might enter His rest beforehand on earth! Praise the Lord!

**Question**

Hey, brother Park!

You seem to assume an air of intelligence on the subject of the Bible; then what will you say about these verses?

"Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of an holy day, or of the new moon, or of the sabbath days" (Col. 2:16, K.J.V.).

"The law and the prophets were until John; since then the good news of the kingdom of God is preached, and every one enters it violently" (Luke 16:16).

He "abolished in His flesh the enmity, even the law of commandments contained in ordinances" (Eph. 2:15, K.J.V.).

"Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to everyone that believeth" (Rom. 10:4, K.J.V.).

"On the one hand, a former commandment is set aside because of its weakness and uselessness for the law made nothing perfect; on the other hand, a better hope is introduced, through which we draw near to God" (Heb. 7:18,19).

"One man esteems as better than another, while another man esteems all days alike. Let every one be fully convinced in his own mind" (Rom. 14:5).

Above verses confirm us that the law and Sabbath were abolished completely in the time of Jesus and John the baptist. And we need not argue about it any more but just pick any day as we are convinced of and keep it honorable. Why do you then, brother Park, still dispute about the Sabbath question like the Pharisees and hypocrites?

**Answer**

I am grateful to my heavenly Father and all the respected faithful elders for providing someone so petty as me such a precious opportunity to make a brief answer to such an important question.

First of all, I pray that God will look into our hearts in this hour and lead us to the way of life; for He said His "word is truth" (John 17:17), and those who add to or subtract from it, distort or teach it falsely to others would be cursed. (Rev. 22:18, 2 Peter 3:16)

There appear not one but six kinds of sabbath days in the Old and New Testaments. These sabbath days have been abolished in His (Jesus') flesh (Eph. 2:15) and become useless since the crucifixion of Jesus the Son of God except one, which is the "Sabbath of the Lord" the Foundation Day of the universe that cannot be abolished nor removed as long as God and the universe exist.

Since then we have "better hope" (Heb. 7:19), for the various inconvenient sabbath days that had been observed until then became useless, and through the grace and merits of the blood of Jesus on the cross we have been enabled to draw near to God. Therefore the "law of ordinances" (ceremonial law) and the words of the "prophets" by whom written in the book had availed until the time of John the baptist who came just before Jesus' First Advent, and from then on a new law (covenant) that teaches salvation through faith in



Christ has begun to be engraved on the tables of human heart (Jer. 31:33, Heb. 10:16).

Now let me tell you more about the laws that is abolished and that is not abolished, and about the abolished sabbaths and the changeless and eternal Sabbath.

The abolished laws are written in Moses' five books: numerous ordinances pertaining to offering burnt sacrifices are the ceremonial "law," "the custom of Moses" (Eph. 2:15, Acts 15:1), that have been abolished. This ritual law with its sacrifices and ordinances, was to be performed until type met antitype in the death of Christ, "the lamb of God which taketh away the sin of the world" (John 1:29), in order to reveal through successive generations the symbol's meaning of the sacrificial rites and ceremonies in relation to the mission of Christ and the plan of redemption. But when Jesus Christ, the antitype of the sacrificial offerings as the Lamb of God came and shed the blood for a sacrifice, all the complicated ceremonial law of types and shadows were abolished along with its various sabbaths. The various sabbaths that have been abolished are as follows.

1. Passover Sabbath (Lev. 23:5, 7, 8) ... the 15th and 21st day of the first month (Jewish calendar)
2. Pentecost Sabbath (Lev. 23:15, 16, 21) ... One day after the seventh sabbath (50th day) from the Jan. 16th (a day after the Passover Sabbath)
3. Feast of Trumpets (Lev. 23:24, 25) ... the first day

4. of the seventh month (Jewish calendar)
4. Atonement Day Sabbath (Lev. 23:27-32) ... the tenth day of the seventh month (Jewish calendar)
5. Feast of Tabernacles (Lev. 23:34-36) ... the 15th and 22nd day of the seventh month (Jewish calendar)

These are the sabbaths of which it is written, "Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of an holy day, or of the new moon, or of the sabbath days" (Col. 2:16, K.J.V.), that had been observed until the days of John the baptist (Luke 16:16), that have been abolished by the sacrifice of Christ. On these sabbath days the ancient God's people killed lambs and offered sacrifice to Him. These seven sabbath days had been valid from the fall of man until the crucifixion of Christ, and had been temporarily given through human agent (Moses), which were strictly observed by Jews seven times every year.

But the "Sabbath of the Lord" contained in His ten commandments is not that which He has given for a time but for an everlasting monument, that which He Himself established in the beginning and kept always, and was written not by human hand but He Himself has engraved upon "the tables of testimony, tables of stone" (Ex. 31:18). It is "the Holy Sabbath of the Lord," the Foundation Day of the Universe, a commemoration day of His vast creation that has nothing to do with the blood of the lamb, the fall of man, and

the crucifixion, given to all inhabitants of the universe, that fallen men will ever keep with joy and gladness in heaven with God. Jesus, the host of angels, and all heavenly beings: and that anyone in the universe should gladly and joyfully observe.

I, Myung Ho, bow down to pray with my whole heart that all of my respecting seniors should have clear understanding of this plain truth and join the great joy and glory in heavenly kingdom.

I am thankful to all for listening to the brief account of this unworthy person.

“Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy. Six days shalt thou labour and do all thy work: but the seventh day is the sabbath of the Lord thy God: in it thou shalt not do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, thy manservant, nor thy maidservant, nor thy cattle, nor thy stranger that is within thy gates: for in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the Lord blessed the Sabbath day, and hallowed it” (Ex. 20:8-11, K.J.V.).

### **23. Our Real Father Who Will Live with Us in a Mansion Forever**

“Then I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away, and the sea was no more. And I saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband; and I heard a loud voice from the throne saying, ‘Behold, the dwelling of God is with men. He will dwell with them, and they shall be His people, and God Himself will be with them; He will wipe away every tear from their eyes, and death shall be no more, neither shall there be mourning nor crying nor pain any more, for the former things have passed away’” (Rev. 21:1-4).

“Then He showed me the river of the water of life, bright as crystal, flowing from the throne of God and of the Lamb through the middle of the street of the city; also, on either side of the river, the tree of life with its twelve kinds of fruit, yielding its fruit each month: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations. There shall no more be anything accursed, but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it, and His servants shall worship Him; they shall see His face, and His name shall be on their foreheads. And night shall be no more: they need no light of lamp or sun, for the Lord God will be their light, and they shall reign forever and ever” (Rev. 22:1-5).

Ah! How long, until we got here in heaven, we have wandered from place to place, suffering trials, and spending our lives with sorrow and tear! But all the painful wandering has now ceased and we are already in our Father's heavenly paradise of eternity. Now we will never go out from here, never leave our loving real Father's bosom again. From hence we will enjoy everlasting happiness walking beside the river of the water of life and build our beautiful homes in the paradise.

"My people will abide in a peaceful habitation, in secure dwellings, and in quiet resting places."

"Violence shall no more be heard in your land, devastation or destruction within your borders; you shall call your walls Salvation, and your gates Praise."

"They shall build houses and inhabit them; they shall plant vineyards and eat their fruit. They shall not build and another inhabit; they shall not plant and another eat... For My chosen shall long enjoy the work of their hands" (Isa. 32:18, 60:18, 65:21,22).

"The wilderness and the dry land shall be glad, the desert shall rejoice and blossom. "... Instead of the thorn shall come up the cypress; instead of the brier shall come up the myrtle" (Isa. 35:1, 55:13). "The wolf shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid, and the calf and the lion and the fatling together, and a little child shall lead them. "... They shall not hurt or destroy in all My holy mountain" (Isa. 11:6,9).

From now on there will be no more grief, vexation, tears, funeral ceremony, or mourning. "And no inhabitant will say, 'I am sick'" (Isa. 33:24). We will dwell in everlasting happiness, and however long we will live there we will not say, 'I am too old to live any longer'. With ever fresh vitality and happiness we will enjoy our Father's everlasting life. Just to give us this life of everlasting happiness, He went through so much trouble, suffering, giving up His only Son to die for us and sacrificing Himself.

O how can we express our thanks to Him who has given us the eternal life!

"Behold, the dwelling of God is with men. He will dwell with them, and they shall be His people, and God Himself will be with them" (Rev. 21:3). But why does God choose to live with His fallen children in the same house who have caused Him so great distress and torment, and not with His sinless children of other worlds who have never tormented nor grieved Him? What a great agony these fallen ones must have caused Him! Did they not crucify His only Son on the cross, and cause the great hole in His heart? And why? Why does He not leave them alone in a far corner of the universe in abhorrence but dwell with them forever who do not deserve His such painstaking concern and care? Our Father's infinite heart of love is beyond our understanding.

Years ago when I was living in a little village in the country I was acquainted with a sincere and pious elder

sister, who was in charge of a small church in the area. She had lost one of her eyes by accident when she was very young. And I remember her telling me of the following story: she was a poor farmer's last daughter in the country and had two elder sisters. But when she got married, she was given something by her father that her two other sisters never received at the time of their marriage. Her poor father gave her a portion of his rice field in compassion that other daughters were not privileged. One day her father gathered every member of his family and said, "Now my poor last daughter who had lost one of her eyesights is going to get married. Let us give her some portion of the rice field. My heart does not allow me to send her away empty handed." The father pitied her enormous suffering and difficulty as a result of the irrecoverable injury inflicted on her eye in her early childhood. He therefore decided to grant her a portion of his farmland which none of his other children received.

Likewise our merciful heavenly Father has determined to live with His fallen earthly children who have gone through bitter experiences of tears, grief, curse, sickness, and even death that the inhabitants of other worlds have not had, although He was wounded and tormented because of them. "God Himself will be with them: He will wipe away every tear from their eyes, they shall be comforted forever, and death shall be no more, neither shall there be mourning nor crying nor pain any more, for the former things have passed

away" (Rev. 21:3,4).

What an unlimited love and mercy of our heavenly Father it is for His most tormented and bruised children! He has completely erased away with His immense love all the painful wounds and distress we have caused Him as a result of our ingratitude and disobedience. Rather, He is deeply touched with our toils that we have brought upon ourselves and binds us up, hugs us and wipes away our tears. What a boundless love it is! Only parents who raised children may dimly understand this love of God.

"Behold the dwelling of God is with men. He will dwell with them, and they shall be His people, and God Himself will be with them: He will wipe away every tear from their eyes, and death shall be no more, neither shall there be mourning nor crying nor pain any more, for the former things have passed away" (Rev. 21:3,4). Thus the children fallen most deeply, suffered most bitter wound and sorrow receive and enjoy His greatest love and favor above all other children of all other worlds in the universe. My dear brethren and sisters! Let us meet together in that glorious place of His love and favor.

Let us not be discouraged by trials but persevere until the day He will wipe away our tears with His sleeve. Let us not disappoint Him any more who loves and cares for us so much. Let us render unto Him great joy by keeping ourselves courageous in times of trials, patient in times of sorrows, and strong in times of



distresses. Praise the Lord!

"For a brief moment I forsook you, but with great compassion I will gather you. In overflowing wrath for a moment I hid My face from you, but with everlasting love I will have compassion on you" (Isa. 54:7,8).

"Thou shalt no more be termed Forsaken: neither shall thy land any more be termed Desolate: but thou shalt be called Hephzibah (My delight is in her), and thy land Beulah (Married)... For as a young man marieth a virgin... and as the bridegroom rejoiceth over the bride, so shall thy God rejoice over thee" (Isa. 62:4,5, K.J.V.).

Praise the Lord! Glory to our real Father who loves us so much and lives with us forever! Praise the Lord!

## **24. With What Shall I Come Before My Lofly Father?**

"With what shall I come before the Lord, and bow myself before God on high? Shall I come before Him with burnt offerings, with calves a year old? Will the Lord be pleased with thousands of rams, with ten thousands of rivers of old? Shall I give my first-born for my transgression, the fruit of my body? (Micah 6:6,7).

"He has showed you, O man, what is good: and what does the Lord require of you but to do justice, and to love kindness, and to walk humbly with your God," and to establish "the kingdom of God" in your heart? (Micah 6:8, Luke 17:21). The kingdom of God cannot be said, "Lo here! or, Lo there! for, behold, the kingdom of God is within you" (Luke 17:21, K.J.V.).

So far we have learned of the love of God, of our real Father that has not been made known in the world, which cannot be put in human words. This is the knowledge which gives eternal life to sinners and the keys of the portals of heaven which Jesus said in John 17:3 and Matthew 16:19.

Now "How shall I recompense my Father for all this?" is our heart's desire, is it not? But He who "made the world and everything in it," and "gives to all men life and breath and everything" (Acts 17:24,

25) does not want from us any goods or anything material that He has already given to us, but wants us only to build in our hearts His kingdom. This is His greatest expectation and desire from us.

Then how should we build the kingdom in order to give Him the greatest joy? This is the question. We well remember that in Eden there were a tree of life and the river of the water of life that all who ate of the tree and drank from the river neither died nor grew old. Therefore if we prepare the ground in the middle of the world of our heart, upon His chosen spot, and establish the paradise of Eden upon it, it will be the kingdom that He would be best pleased with and desires.

When the Son of God, Jesus lived on earth He was a walking Garden of Eden. He was truly the Garden of Eden walking upon the earth, the supplier of heaven's abundant living water and the fruit of the tree of life that all sinners in the world could have free access to and freely drink and eat, to have eternal life. It is our Father's unique desire that we all, like Jesus, should become the walking Garden of Eden on earth, the supplier of the fruit of the tree of life and the living water to this perishing world.

Now let us all stand up and set our hearts on building the everlasting Garden of Eden that all the world can freely come and obtain eternal life from as our Father eagerly desires us to do.

### \* The Tree of Life

First we need the tree of life in our hearts' Garden. And where can we find it and how should we plant it?

Oh! the tree of life standing over there on the hill of John 15 of the Bible mountain is shaking its branch-hands toward us to take itself. "I am truly the tree of life. Take and plant me and you will bear 'much fruit'. If you don't, you will not be able to obtain the fruit of the tree of life or anything." (John 15:1,5).

Now the tree of life that we planted in the garden of our hearts' Eden just now is truly the tree of life—Jesus Christ—that will "yield its twelve kinds of fruit each month" (Rev. 22:2), the fruit of the Spirit.

### \* The River of the Water of Life

Second we need the water of life in our hearts' Eden that has been desolate and arid for six thousand years.

Oh look! At the foot of the "Revelation mountain" "the Spirit and the bride" are motioning us to come exclaiming, "Come every one who is thirsty, and who desires it" (Rev. 22:17). Jesus, who is standing by them, is exclaiming, "'If any one thirst, let him come to Me' and ask for the river of the water of life, and in his garden shall be a well of water springing up into everlasting life and from him 'shall flow rivers of living water' unceasingly" (John 7:37,38, 4:14).

The source of the river of living water we just asked for is the Holy "Spirit which they that believe on Him

should receive" (John 7:39), from which it shall flow out to the end of this desolate world. He from whom the rivers of living water flows out is "like a tree planted by the river of water, that bringeth forth his fruit in his season; and his leaf shall not wither, and whatsoever he doeth shall prosper" (Ps. 1:3, K.J.V.).

### \* The Fine Gold

The third is the fine "gold" that was in the land of the first Eden (Gen. 2:12).

Oh! look over there. The Lord is coming with a big lump of fine gold in His hands shouting toward us to take it from Him, "Buy of Me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich" and your Garden will be beautiful and rich (Rev. 3:18).

This gold tried in the fire is the faith through love that loves God and all mankind as a family—the agapeic love, which is God's light and life. "Now abideth faith, hope, love, these three; but the greatest of these is love." "Love never faileth; but whether there be prophecies, they shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease" (1 Cor. 13:13, 18, K.J.V.).

### \* The White Raiment of Glory

For the last, if we can only cover our "nakedness" (Rev. 3:17) with the white raiment of glorious light that we forfeited by the deceiver's temptation in the first Eden, we will not try to flee from God when He visits our new Eden like Adam and Eve did but joyfully

welcome His approach and walk along in the Garden. Then where can we find the white raiment of glory?

"Behold.... the heavens opened," and the Lord standing "at the right hand of God" (Acts 7:56, Mark 16:19) is exclaiming to us holding the white raiment in His hand, "Let not your heart be troubled. Buy of Me... white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that the shame of thy nakedness do not appear. Any one who clothes himself with the white raiment that I give, and cover his shame shall dwell with Me and minister to Me" (John 14:1, K.J.V., Rev. 3:18, K.J.V., Ps. 101:6). This white raiment is the holy character that is as "perfect" (Matt. 5:48) as our heavenly Father, the sanctified character with which all His children must be clothed, the only property we can bring to heaven. And this is the very garment with which we must be clothed in when we participate in the marriage feast that the King of heaven will soon hold. (Matt. 22:11, 12)

Now in the hearts of His children who have completed their hearts' Edens that will be carried to heaven, "there shall be no more curse; but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it; and His servants shall serve Him: and they shall see his face; and His name shall be in their foreheads. There shall be no night" in their hearts; "and they need no candle, neither light of the sun: for the Lord God giveth them light," and in this world and the world to come "they shall reign forever and ever. Hallelujah! (Rev. 22:3-5, K.J.V.).

**\* Blessed People**

< Blessed are the children of God who have reestablished the Garden of Eden in their hearts today. The trine God come to abide in their hearts and they are His friends. The three Godheads are their eternal Guests, for in their hearts is the throne of God. They shall be carried to heaven and not be destroyed with the wicked. As the Garden of Eden was carried into heaven when the flood came, so will they be carried into heaven by the hand of God.

But those who have not reestablished the Garden of Eden today, as they were buried in the water in the days of Noah, shall be swallowed up by fire. They are nothing but flesh like the passing wind never to return again. Their hearts are unstable and wavering. They were sleeping in the days of probation and counsel. >

Dear brethren and sisters! I earnestly wish that we all here today build the paradise of Eden and enjoy His special love and favor and protection to keep us "as the apple of His eye" (Deut. 32:10) and be carried to heaven. Praise the Lord!

**\* Things to Memorize for Complete Regeneration**

I appreciate every one of my brethren and sisters for reading this book up to now. Closing this chapter I would like to make a request. The knowledge of God's love that we have received is our heavenly Father's final light and gift for us in these last days of earth's history and it is that knowledge which gives us eternal life (John 17:3) and the keys of heaven. I believe. Therefore although it is good for you to read through this book once and put it away, I am assured that you should never lose this knowledge of God's love but keep it in mind meditating upon it in daily life since it is the sacred knowledge which gives life to sinners. And your life and character will not only be transformed to the image of God in miraculous process but your life will also become a succession of unspeakable joy and peace of heaven. And your life will be uplifted high as if you were embraced in His arms. This is the life of unity with God, walking with Him as did Enoch.

Perhaps you cannot bear the whole content of this book in your mind; now I will show you how you can keep this knowledge of eternal life in your mind and meditate upon it all the time.

First, read through this book as many times as you need so that the whole content of each subject may flash through your mind clearly whenever you look up any one of the 24 subjects' headings.



Second, write down the entire subjects' headings on a sheet of paper or in your pocket book as below, and while you are employed in your busy duties of life look them up at every odd moment and meditate upon them one by one.

The Only True God

1. My Father's Lovely Form and Character
2. My Father's Love Thicker than the Blood of the Cross and Stronger than the Death of the Cross
3. My real Father who has Truly Borne Me
4. My Father who Made Me a Sweet Home as a Branch Home of Heaven
5. My Daddy who has Chosen Me and Paired Me with Jesus My Eldest Brother
6. My Daddy who Answers to All My Prayers Personally
7. My Daddy who has Forgiven Me of My Iniquity, Transgression, and Sin.
8. My Daddy who Healed All My Diseases
9. My Daddy who is Working Diligently for Me and My Brothers and Sisters
10. My Daddy who has Given Me a Sinner His Holy Spirit as a Gift
11. My Daddy who has Given Me Another Fruit of the Life
12. My Daddy who Sanctifies Me to Bear Fruit
13. My Daddy who has Given Away Jesus His First-born Son Only for Me

14. My Daddy who was Tormented with My Eldest Brother on the Cross to Save Me
15. My Daddy who Comes into My Heart and Dwells with Me Personally
16. My Daddy who Raises Me from the Dead and Gives Me Eternal Life
17. My Daddy who Weeps on His Judgment Seat
18. My Daddy who Disciplines Me with Love
19. My Daddy who has Given Me His Throne
20. My Daddy who has Given Me His Royal Authority
21. My Daddy who has Given Me His Kingdom
22. My Daddy who has Given Me an Everlasting Sign
23. My Daddy who Lives with Me in a Mansion Forever
24. With What shall I Come before My Father, the Lofly God?

Third, memorize these 24 headings completely and meditate upon every one day and night. And in due time a great change will take place in your life, and you will find yourself reaching to the high, uplifted state of sanctification that you could neither imagine nor experience before.—a state of transforming into the perfection "as your Father which is in heaven is perfect" (Matt. 5:48).

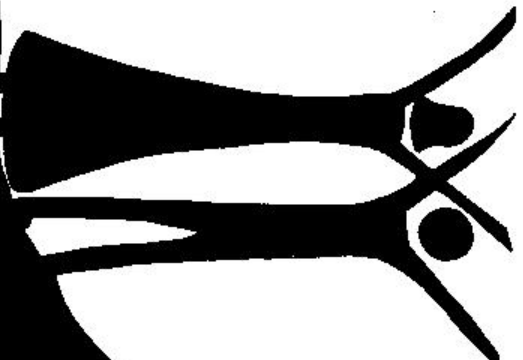
In this way to all His children on earth who have accepted their Father who is in heaven and is at the

The Heart With and Without the Sun of God  
Love

same time "not far from every one of us" (Acts 17:27), and dwells with us everyday (Isa. 57:15), as a personal Father. He becomes their eternal Father individually, a merciful real Father who gives them eternal life.

"But the people that do know their God shall be strong, and do exploits" (Dan. 11:32, K.J.V.). "But for you who fear My name, the sun of righteousness shall rise with healing in its wings. You shall go forth leaping like calves from the stall" (Mal. 4:2). And they "shall shine like the brightness of the firmament.... like the stars" in heaven "forever and ever" (Dan. 12:3). "The earth will be filled with the knowledge of the glory of the Lord, as the waters cover the sea" (Hab. 2:14). "The sun shall be no more thy light by day; neither for brightness shall the moon give light unto thee: but the Lord shall be unto thee an everlasting light, and thy God thy glory. Thy sun shall no more go down: neither shall thy moon withdraw itself: for the Lord shall be thine everlasting light, and the days of thy mourning shall be ended," "saith the Lord of hosts" (Isa. 60:19,20, K.J.V., Mal. 4:3, K.J.V.).

Praise the Lord! My loving Father! My proud Father!  
Glory forever! Praise the Lord!



## Chapter III. Jesus Christ (The Holy Son)

“This is life eternal that they might know... Jesus Christ” (John 17:3, K.J.V.).

### **A Word of Request**

Now in this chapter we will learn the second condition for eternal life, that is to “know Jesus Christ” (John 17:3). The precious knowledge of Jesus Christ, the Son of God is a hidden mystery that no one in the world nor angels can impart but the Father who has been with Him from “the beginning of His way, before His works of old”; “no one knows the Son except the Father” (Matt. 11:27).

I wish that before we begin we have a brief time to kneel humbly before our Father in order that He may unfold the sacred and mysterious knowledge of His Son Jesus Christ clearly to us.

## 1. Christ's Outward Appearance and Inward Heart

### (1) His Outward Appearance

There are various opinions and descriptions in regard to Jesus' outward appearance as He was on earth. But now let us listen to the testimonies of two eye-witnesses and of the Bible and find out what He was like.

Lentulus who was a candidate for the governor of Judea in the days of Jesus described His face and figure as follows, "A man of great power called Jesus is living in our days in this region. People call Him a prophet of truth, and His disciples the Son of God. He raises up the dead and heals the sick. His body and stature is middle and well-balanced. He is a man of so virtuous features that those who glance at Him are forced to feel tear and affection toward Him. His hair is chestnut-brown and curled and waves smoothly around His ears; it covers slightly His shoulders like waves of water, and is parted in the middle of His head in harmony with the customs of Nazarites. His face is tender and calm without wrinkle or wound, and a little ruddy. Nose and mouth are goodlooking. The beard is much and not shaved, the same in color with the hair and not too long, and parted from the chin. The eyes are impressive and glittering. While He reproves in a severe tone, He is gentle and meek and

so cheerful as to try to be solemn, when He advises. He rarely ever laughs but weeps sometimes. His body is slender and of upright posture; hands and arms look fine. He speaks in an earnest tone and not much, and that, thoughtfully. He must be the most elegant among the children of men."

Here is also a testimony discovered from a trustworthy and thoughtfully recorded report that Pontius Pilate the Governor sent to Caesar the Emperor; he once met Jesus personally face to face and also took charge of His final judgment.

"One day as I was pushing my way through a crowd in a place called Shilo, I came to notice a young man addressing toward the crowd while leaning on the tree. Someone informed me that he was Jesus. He looked about 30 years old. I have never seen such a serene face that captivates one's heart.... (Later) I sent a letter to Jesus to request a meeting at the Government-general Hall. Jesus came. As Your Majesty already know I came from a mixed background of both Roman and Spanish blood who know no such fragile emotional element as fear. When the Nazarite came in, I had been strolling about in the reception room. Then, all of a sudden, my feet became immobilized on the ground as if iron hands were adhered to the marble floor. The young man of Nazareth was standing rather calmly there and yet my whole body was trembling as if I were a guilty criminal. Though he did not speak a word, he drew near me as if telling me, "I am here." For a while, I gazed at this extraordinary person with respect and fear and he had the kind of feature that



had not yet been portrayed by countless artists who attempted to draw portraits of all gods and heroes in the past. There was nothing in his trait that might reveal any defect in such characteristics. — <“Pontius Pilate” in his report to Caesar the Roman Emperor > Another Witness, God the Father testifies in the Bible, “He hath no form nor comeliness” of world’s hypocrites (Isa. 53:2), but “My Beloved is white and ruddy, the chiefest among ten thousand.” “He is altogether lovely” (Song. 5:10,16, K.J.V.). “This is My Beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased” (Matt. 3:17, K.J.V.).

To put these testimonies synthetically, we can find that the features and whole figures of Jesus was altogether very beautiful and well-balanced, and so lofty, blameless and holy that those who looked at Him were seized with fear by His dignity and personality overflowing with God’s love and grace. He was the express image of God that came to make manifest the invisible God. “No man hath seen God at any time; the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, He hath declared Him” (John 1:18, K.J.V.).

## (2) His Inward Heart

Jesus was a man of unspeakable humility. He, “though He was in the form of God, did not count equality with God a thing to be grasped, but emptied Himself, taking the form of a servant, being born in the likeness of men. And being found in human form He humbled Himself and became obedient unto death,

even death on a cross” (Phi. 2:6-8). Truly “He was wounded for our transgressions, He was bruised for our iniquities; the chastisement of our peace was upon Him, and with His stripes we are healed” (Isa. 53:5, K.J.V.). “Surely He has borne our griefs and carried our sorrows; yet we esteemed Him stricken, smitten by God, and afflicted” (Isa. 53:4). “He was despised and rejected by men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief; and as one from whom men hide their faces He was despised, and we esteemed Him not... He was oppressed, and He was afflicted, yet He opened not His mouth; like a lamb that is led to the slaughter, and like a sheep that before its shearers is dumb, so He opened not His mouth. By oppression and judgement He was taken away; and as for His generation, who considered that He was cut off out of the land of the living, stricken for the transgression of my people? And they made His grave with the wicked and with a rich man in His death, although He had done no violence, and there was no deceit in His mouth” (Isa. 53:3, 7-9).

“He committed no sin; no guile was found on His lips. When He was reviled, He did not revile in return; when He suffered, He did not threaten; but He trusted to Him who judges justly. He Himself bore sins” of sinners “in His body on the tree, that” sinners “might die to sin and live to righteousness” (1 Peter 2:22-24). In the world “one will hardly die for a righteous man—though perhaps for a good man one will dare even to die. But God shows His love for us in that while we were yet sinners Christ died for us” (Rom. 5:7, 8).

Jesus' life was one of persecution and insult who, in order to save sinners, had abandoned His heavenly Court and came down to this earth in human form. Driven from Bethlehem by a jealous king, rejected by His own people at Nazareth, condemned to death without a cause at Jerusalem, Jesus, with His few faithful followers, found a temporary asylum in a strange city. He who was ever touched by human woe, who healed the sick, and restored sight to the blind, hearing to the deaf, and speech to the dumb, who fed the hungry and comforted the sorrowful, was driven from the people He had labored to save.

"Though He was rich He became poor" for the sake of earthly sinners, so that the poor sinners "might become rich" (2 cor. 8:9).

Voluntarily He went through poverty and shame. He was often hungry, thirsty, and tired from physical labour. But He had nowhere to lay His head. (Matt. 8:20) In cold, dewy nights He often laid on a wet, bare ground to sleep. But lying on bare ground He blessed them that had rejected Him a moment before. "He was in the world, and the world was made by Him, and the world knew Him not. He came unto His own, and His own received Him not" (John 1:10,11, K.J.V.). Truly He who had abandoned heaven and come to save sinners was "despised and rejected by men... and as one from whom men hide their faces He was despised" (Isa. 53:3). The disciples did not even understand the loneliness of Christ in its true state who had left His Father's bosom and spent a life as a man on earth.

He at times sorrowed as He did not receive the appropriate treatment even from His own disciples. But He never spoke a word of anger or displeasure with His lips.

He said, "The Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give His life a ransom for many" (Matt. 20:28, K.J.V.).

A spirit of self-pity could never be found in Him; it was solely to bless others that He lived, thought, and prayed. Oh! If the witnesses for Christ in the world had kept the mind of Christ Jesus in their hearts (Phi. 2:5), what a great change could be seen today! How many children of God would have returned to the ranks of the redeemed!

As long as a tittle of selfishness, evil thought, or self-pity remain in our hearts we cannot become perfect witnesses for Jesus. Rather, we will represent Jesus as someone different from His true character leading the world to conceive Him as selfish, arrogant, begottd, destitue of love, mercy, compassion, and unforgiving as we are. Jesus says, "If any man will come after Me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow Me" (Matt. 16:24, K.J.V.). "If any one comes to Me and does not hate... even his own life, he cannot be My disciple. "...Whoever... does not renounce all that he has cannot be My disciple" (Luke 14:26,33). "Love your enemies, do good to those who hate you, bless those who curse you, pray for those who abuse you" (Luke 6:27,28).

"If you love those who love you, what credit is that to you? For even sinners love those who love them.

And if you do good to those who do good to you, what credit is that to you? For even sinners do the same" (Luke 6:32, 33).

"Do not resist one who is evil. But if any one strikes you on the right cheek, turn to him the other also; and if any one would sue you and take your coat, let him have your cloak as well; and if any one forces you to go one mile, go with him two miles. Give to him who begs from you, and do not refuse him who would borrow from you. . . . "Whatever you wish that men would do to you, do so to them. . . ." so that you may be sons of your heavenly Father who is in heaven" (Matt. 5:39-42, 7:12, 5:45). This was His inward heart and character and His life.

If we His followers, therefore, cherish jealousy in all sorts of trifling matters, take defensive attitudes against any loss, or strive to maintain the spirit of self-dignity in heart, we give evidence that we are not noble-minded people. In spite of false accusations, we are to submit ourselves and love our enemies (Matt. 5:40,44). If any one would exploit us a mile, we are to avail ourselves two miles. "Why not rather be wronged? Why not rather be cheated?" (1 Cor. 6:7, K.J.V.). By so doing we shall become sons and daughters of God, the approved disciples of Jesus.

The only work that He accepts is the work that reflects His image. His followers are to bear, as their credentials to the world, His image the ineffaceable characteristics of His immortal principles. In choosing men and women for His service, God does not ask

whether they possess worldly wealth, learning, or eloquence. He asks, "Do they walk in such humility that I can teach them My way? Can I put My sacred words into their lips? Do they have faultless, sanctified lips? Will they perfectly represent My character? How much do they possess My Spirit?"

As God sent Jesus as the Saviour of the world who would perfectly represent His character, so is Jesus seeking for those who will perfectly represent His character to send them into the world. He says to them, "As the Father has sent Me, even so I send you" (John 20:21).

The Jews cultivated a spirit of retaliation. In their hatred of Romans they gave utterance to hard denunciations, and pleased the wicked one by manifesting his attributes. Jesus bade them not deceive themselves with the thought that they could in heart rise up against their oppressors, and cherish the longing to avenge their wrongs. He was to do His work, not by overturning of thrones and kingdoms, not with pomp and outward display, but through speaking to the hearts of men by a life of mercy and self-sacrifice.

The kingdom of God comes not with outward show. It comes through the gentleness of the inspiration of His word, through the inward working of His Spirit, the fellowship of the soul with Him who is its life.

Human effort will be efficient in the work of God just according to the consecrated devotion of the worker—by revealing the power of the grace of Christ to transform life.

There can be no more conclusive evidence that we possess the spirit of Satan than the disposition to hurt and destroy those who do not appreciate our work, or who work contrary to our ideas.

The servants of Christ are not to act out the dictates of the natural heart. They need to have close communion with God, lest, under provocation, self rise up, and they pour forth a torrent of words that are unbefitting, that are not as dew or the still showers that refresh the withering plants. This is what Satan wants them to do: for these are his methods. It is Satan that is wroth; it is the spirit of Satan that is revealed in anger and accusing. But God's servants are to be representatives of Him. They are to fix their eyes upon Christ. Then they can present the gospel with divine tact and gentleness. And the spirit that is kept gentle under provocation will speak more effectively in favor of the truth than will any argument, however forcible.

Strength of character consists of two things—power of will and power of self-control. The strongest man is he, who, while sensitive to abuse, will yet restrain passion and forgive his enemies. Such men are true heroes in the sight of God and Jesus.

Jesus is glorified through them and makes them channels of His power and He will bring them as His attendants wherever He goes (Ps. 101:6).

“Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus” (Phi. 2:5).

## 2. Jesus Christ, the True God Who Came in Human Form

“Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call His name Emmanuel, which being interpreted is, God with us” (Matt. 1:23, K.J.V.).

“He, though He was in the form of God, did not count equality with God a thing to be grasped, but emptied Himself, taking the form of a servant, being born in the likeness of men.”—while being a true God (Phi. 2:6-8). “Since therefore” His “children share in flesh and blood, He Himself likewise partook of the same nature, that through death He might destroy him who has the power of death, that is, the devil, and deliver all those who through fear of death were subject to lifelong bondage... Therefore He had to be made like His brethren in every respect, so that He might become a merciful and faithful High Priest in the service of God, to make expiation for the sins of the people” (Heb. 2:14-17).

Jesus Christ who was born as a baby two thousand years ago was not a man Jesus that began His existence at the time, but a God who had been from eternity and come down to this earth in human likeness, the true God who was clothed with humanity (1 John 5:20). His flesh was a son of man, Jesus a Nazarite, but as for His spirit He was the Son of God, the Second Person of the Godhead abundant with divine power and might. As for His humanity He was a man



Jesus, but as for His divinity He was the Son of God representing God; He Himself was the Almighty God.

Centuries before He came to earth as a man the prophet Isaiah had prophesied, "Unto us a Child is born, unto us a Son is given: and the government shall be upon His shoulder: and His name shall be called Wonderful, Counseller, The Mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace" (Isa. 9:6, K.J.V.). He is an everlasting God "without father, without mother, without descent, having neither beginning of days, nor end of life," who has been with God the Father from the days of eternity (Heb. 7:3).

As He came to earth He spoke, "The Son of man came to seek and to save the lost" (Luke 19:10). "What do you think? If a man has a hundred sheep, and one of them has gone astray, does he not leave the ninety-nine on the mountains and go in search of the one that went astray?" "The Son of man came to seek and to save the lost sheep"—this earth (Matt. 18:12, Luke 19:10)

As He was in the synagogue He spoke to the multitude, "Your Father Abraham rejoiced that he was to see My day: he saw it and was glad" (John 8:56). Then the Jews said to Him, "You are not yet fifty years old, and have you seen Abraham?" (John 8:57). "Jesus said to them, 'Truly, truly, I say to you, before Abraham was I am'" (John 8:58). In this way He made it clear to the blind Jewish leaders that He had existed from before Abraham, before the foundation of the world, from eternity.

Truly He was the God of infinite love who came down to save His perishing children on earth, "who, though He was in the form of God, did not count equality with God a thing to be grasped, but emptied Himself, taking the form of a servant." It was not at any one's urge or counsel that caused Him to come down to save the one lost sheep, the earthly children in the form of a humble man; He voluntarily sacrificed Himself. He could have remained by His Father side, and to receive the glory and reverence from angels. But in order that He might give light to the world of darkness, and life to His perishing earthly children He decided for Himself to give up His throne to His Father and come down.

Two thousand years ago a mystic voice was spoken from the throne of heaven. "Sacrifices and offerings Thou hast not desired, but a body hast Thou prepared for Me." "Lo, I have come to do Thy will, O God, as it is written of Me in the roll of the book" (Heb. 10:5, 7). In this word has been proclaimed the fulfillment of the purpose that had been hidden from eternity. Christ was to take upon Himself human nature to come down to this earth. He said: "A body hast thou prepared for Me." If He had come with the glory that He had had with the Father from the foundation of the world, we could have not stood the dazzling light of His presence. But in order that we might see and not be consumed by it He covered His glory (of God) with His flesh. His divinity was covered with humanity: the invisible glory appeared visible in the form of a man. And He had not any outward beauty attrac-

tive in the sight of men: yet He was God transformed into flesh, the Light to heaven and earth. It was to approach His earthly children surrounded with sorrow and temptation that He covered His glory, grandeur, and majesty. At the moment Satan seemed to have gained the full victory, "when the fullness of the time was come" (Gal. 4:4), the Son of God appeared with heaven's mission of grace. "The word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, and we beheld His glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father, full of grace and truth." (John 1:14, K.J.V.).

Jesus came from heaven in order that He might reshape the character of His earthly children that had been ruined by sin. He came to drive out the devil that had been taking possession of men's will. He came to deliver us from the dust and dirt, and transform our ruined characters into His holiness and clothe them with the beauty of His glory.

The story of Bethlehem is an exhaustless theme. We marvel at the Saviour's sacrifice in exchanging the throne of heaven for the manger, and the companionship of adoring angels for the beasts of the stall. Yet this was but the beginning of wonderful condescension. It would have been an almost infinite humiliation for the Son of God to take man's nature even when Adam stood in his innocence in Eden. But Jesus accepted humanity when the race had been weakened by four thousand years of sin. Like every child of Adam He accepted the results of the great law of

heredity. He came with such a heredity to share our sorrows and temptations, and to give us the example of a sinless life.

As I see the maggots in the cesspool. I am led to think about our Lord God Jesus who gave up heaven and came down in the very form of a filthy sinner into this world full of terrible stench of sin, and ask myself, "You, Myung Ho! If you were told to go into the cesspool and become a magot and live there forever, could you do it?"

"Oh! never, never could I do it!"

"Then, how about just for one day and return?"  
But my answer still springs forth the same, "Oh, no!"

O but the highest, lofty, and holy God our Lord Jesus had left His lofty status and position of God and has come down to this cesspool-like earth compared with the heavenly court and become a man-magot.

Oh what a sorrowful fact of His amazing sacrifice! It is that which neither sinners nor angels can understand; only the Father who is equal with Him knows the length, height, and depth of His sacrifice!

It would have been an almost infinite humiliation and insult for the God of heaven even to become a glorious, holy angel; but what a startling sacrifice He payed in becoming a man lower than angels in this sinful world! O He is still sitting at the right hand of God as a man! (Mark 16:19, Ps. 110:1). He had not become a man for a time, but He has become a man forever. It is His

(God's) unending sacrifice and humiliation.

O what should I say, how should I lament for my God's, my Father's infinite humiliation and sacrifice that have been payed all for me, to save me alone! When I will see my Lord's, my Father's face in heaven someday, what will I be able to say to Him or how can I see His face? With what words will I comfort and thank Him? O I am a sinner, the chief of sinners!

### 3. Jesus Christ, the Creator God of the Universe

"In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. . . . And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, and we beheld His glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father, full of grace and truth" (John 1:1, 14, K.J.V.).

Jesus Himself says, "The Lord possessed Me in the beginning of His way, before His works of old. I was set up from everlasting, from the beginning, or ever the earth was. When there were no depths, I was brought forth: when there were no fountains abounding with water. Before the mountains were settled, before the hills was I brought forth: while as yet He had not made the earth, nor the fields, nor the highest part of the dust of the world. When He prepared the heavens, I was there: when He set a compass upon the face of the depth: when He established the clouds above: when He strengthened the fountains of the deep: when He gave to the sea His decree, that the waters should not pass His commandment: when He appointed the foundations of the earth: then I was by Him, as one brought up with Him: and I was daily His delight, rejoicing always before Him" (Pro. 8:22-30, K.J.V.).

When He was upon the earth the Father said, "This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased" (Matt. 3:17, 17:5); and the Son said to His Father, "And now,

O Father, glorify Thou Me with Thine own self with the glory which I had with Thee before the world was" (John 17:5, K.J.V.).

Truly "He (Jesus) is the image of the invisible God, the first-born of all creation; for in Him all things were created, in heaven and on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or dominions or principalities or authorities—all things were created through Him and for Him. He is before all things, and in Him all things hold together" (Col. 1:15-17). But "He was in the world, and the world was made by Him, and the world knew Him not. He came unto His own, and His own received Him not" (John 1:10, 11, K.J.V.).

I remember a story I heard when I was a little boy. Once there was a benevolent king in Korea called "Seong Jong the Great", who used to leave his royal throne at times and travel incognito having dressed himself like a commoner in order that he might observe the circumstance of his people. One night as he was walking around Seoul the Capital City, there sounded "Bang! Bang!" from a blacksmith's shop though it was already past midnight. He drew toward the shop and making a sudden appearance, he started addressing the smith who was much absorbed in his work.

"Hello! Why is it that you are working so hard in this midnight?" And the smith answered without even casting a look at him.

"I have to work hard in order to pay debt and lay

debt." But the king did not catch his meaning. If he has to pay off debts, he must be a debtor; and how can he 'lay' debt, being a debtor himself? And he asked back, "Don't you have to pay off your debts, and what do you mean by 'laying debt'?" And he, displeased with an annoying, uninvited guest, talked back coldly, "How come you are so dullbrained that you cannot even understand a word like this? To pay off my debt means to practice filial piety toward my parents, and to lay debt means to bring up and educate my children." And the king nodded, saying, "Oh! Is that so? Now I see. I am very sorry for hindering your work. Then may you succeed in what you do." And the king came back to his court.

The next day the king sat on his royal throne dressed up with his kingly robe as usual and commanded to bring the blacksmith to him. Now surprised at the sudden royal command for someone so lowly and unknown like him to present before the king, he immediately ceased his work, dressed up quickly, went to the king, and fell prostrate before him, saying, "Your Majesty, I presented myself before Your Majesty."

"Lift your face, look up to me; I am the man who visited your house last night."

He was exceedingly frightened, and thinking back how bluntly he talked to him without realizing that he was a king, he fell to the ground and begged for remission.

"I have committed a death-deserving sin against you, Your Majesty."



"No, I will greatly reward you for your filial piety and industry."

Thus the Great King Seong Jong granted a great and abundant reward to the humble, industrious blacksmith and sent him back.

Likewise Jesus, the King of the universe, the Majesty of heaven who had made the universe and all the worlds in it with His Father and had dominion over them all exchanged His royal throne and robe with man's plain clothes and came into this dark earth devoid of light and life in the land of Judea as an uninvited Guest. And like any other human being He had talked with people, ate with them, slept with them, laboured with them, and personally tasted and experienced their hardships and difficulties, and returned to His royal throne in heaven.

"He was in the world, and the world was made by Him, and the world knew Him not. He came unto His own, and His own received Him not" (John 1:10,11). Now every one upon the earth will see how he (or she) treated the holy, benevolent King of heaven. In the near future He shall "sit upon the throne of His glory" and call "all nations before Him" as with the case of the blacksmith, and everyone will see Him clearly face to face and find out who it was that appeared two thousand years ago in plain clothes. (Matt. 25:31,32)

Indeed, our God Jesus was "the true God" sitting on the throne of heaven, who had taken compassion on His children on earth and come down to save them "who were subject to lifelong bondage" under the

power of Satan the enemy and his agents and destroyed under "the power of death" (1 John 5:20), Heb. 2:14-16). He is the One by whom "all things were created in heaven and on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or dominions or principalities or authorities—all things were created through Him and for Him" (Col. 1:16). And our Earth-Eden was also His handy-work that was made and decorated by Him who had been with the Father from the beginning of His works, and given to us as a gift to be our heaven.

Therefore our heavenly Father speaks, "This is 'My Fellow', 'in whom I am well pleased', saith the Lord of hosts" (Zech. 13:7, Matt. 3:17). Indeed, our Lord Jesus is the true God, the Creator, the Second Person of the Godhead "who is in the form of God, " "equal with God," "who has been "a Fellow" with God the Father from everlasting to everlasting (Phi. 2:6). There is none in heaven and on earth who can deliver the children of earth from the power of the furious devil and his agents but the mighty power and precious blood of this God Jesus. His hand has hung the worlds in space and made the flowers of the field beautiful. "By Thy strength" hast Thou "established the mountains, " "The sea is His, for He made it" (Ps. 65:6, 95:5).

As He filled the earth with beauty, and the air with singing, He wrote the message of His Father's love upon everything on earth, in the air, and in heaven.

He says, "I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the Lord, which was, and which is

to come, the Almighty" (Rev. 1:8, K.J.V.). "Behold, I come quickly; and My reward is with Me, to give every man according as his work shall be. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last." "Surely I come quickly. Amen. Even so, come, Lord Jesus" (Rev. 22:12,13,20, K.J.V.).

Praise the Lord! Glory to our God Jesus, our Creator, our benevolent King forever! Praise the Lord!

#### 4. Jesus Christ, the Only Saviour of Man

"And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call His name JESUS: for He shall save His people from their sins" (Matt. 1:21, K.J.V.).

"He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest." "which shall be born of thee.... the Son of God." "Jesus Christ: He is Lord of all" (Lukae 1:32, 35, Acts 10:36, K.J.V.).

"Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men" (Lukae 2:14, K.J.V.).

The Son of God is called "the Messiah" in Hebrew (John 1:41), and in Greek, "the Christ" (John 4:25), which is translated into our language "The Anointed" (Acts 4:27) or "The Commissioned." Therefore the Bible writes of Him, "Thy holy child Jesus, whom Thou hast anointed" (Acts 4:27, K.J.V.). "The Son of God" "whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the world" (John 10:36, K.J.V.).

"In the name of Jesus Christ I pray" with which we close our prayers implies such a precious meaning as this: "My heavenly Father! I pray to Thee trusting in the name of Thy holy Son Jesus my God and Saviour whom Thou hast sent with a commission to save a sinner like me."

Jesus said, "Ye shall ask in My name" (John 16:26, K.J.V.). "Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in My name, He will give it you" (John 16:23, K.J.V.).

Our Father God bestows upon us the salvation of

the world and "every good and perfect gift" only through the name of Jesus Christ His Son whom He has commissioned and sent to us (James 1:17).

Jesus said, "I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by Me" (John 14:6). Therefore "whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord" Jesus Christ "shall be delivered," "for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved" (Joel 2:32, Acts 4:12).

"But as many as received Him, to them gave He power to become the sons of God" (John 1:12). "For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life," and "that the world through Him might be saved" (John 3:16,17).

"In Him was life; and the life was the light of men. And the light shineth in darkness and the darkness comprehended it not." "That was the true light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world." "in whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge" (John 1:4, 5, 9, Col. 2:3).

Jesus again said, "I am the light of the world; he that followeth Me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life" (John 8:12).

"I am that bread of life" "which cometh down from heaven: that a man may eat thereof, and not die. I am the living bread which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live forever" (John 6:48,50,51).

"I will give... the water of life"; "whosoever drinketh

of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst: but the water that I shall give him shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life" (Rev. 21:6, John 4:14).

"I am the way, the truth, and the life," whoever you may be "without Me... you can do nothing" (John 14:6, 15:5, K.J.V.).

"Search the Scriptures: for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are they which testify of Me" (John 5:39, K.J.V.).

"This is life eternal that they might know... Jesus Christ" whom the only true God has sent to the world. (John 17:3, K.J.V.).

When man knows aright and accepts Jesus Christ else whom God has not chosen anyone to commit the work of redemption of the world to, he obtains eternal life. Only in Jesus Christ is found the precious blood to cleanse the sinner, the true light to enlighten the world of darkness, the immortal life, and the only way that leads to heaven. And all the treasures of truth, knowledge and wisdom of the universe are found only in Him, and only through Him they are imparted. He is the center of all powers and might of the universe; He is the Chief Superintendent of the universe. None but He has the power to perfectly transform sinners and to bring all His children who follow Him to the Father's kingdom at the last day.

We are powerless and helpless in extricating ourselves from the pit of sin in which we have been fallen by our own transgressions. Only as we put our whole trust

in the mighty arms of Jesus our Saviour we can be freed from this deep pit of death. He is the one and only "Crane" that our heavenly Father has provided for this derailed earth. Only His mighty arms can lift up this crashed earth into its original orbit.

Only His hands can perfectly repair and restore broken, impaired, lost, and twisted parts and all sorts of breakdowns in the heart of man.

"Who can bring a clean thing out of an unclean? No one" (Job 14:4).

"The carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be" (Rom. 8:7). Yes, education, culture, the exercise of the will, human effort, all have their proper sphere, but they are powerless in changing heart from within. They may produce an outward correctness of behavior, but they cannot change the heart nor purify the springs of life.

There must be a power working from within, a new life from above before men can be changed from sin to holiness. That power is Christ. His grace alone can quicken the lifeless faculties of the soul, and attract it to God, to holiness. Paul the apostle, although he was a man of highest worldly education and culture, exclaimed, in the bitterness of his soul-anguish and despair, "I am carnal, sold under sin" (Rom. 7:14). He longed for the purity, the righteousness, to which in himself he was powerless to attain, and cried out, "O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from this body of death?" (Rom. 7:24). Such is the cry that

has gone up from burdened hearts in all lands and in all ages. To all there is but one answer, "Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world" (John 1:29). In this manner as a sinner comes to Christ, he is freed from all burden of sin heavy and toilsome, and burdens of life, and begins to live a life of union with Christ—a life of rest unto his soul, of heavenly peace and joy (Matt. 11:28,29).

When, after his sin in deceiving Esau and Issac his father, Jacob fled from his father's home, he was weighed down with a sense of guilt. Lonely and out-cast as he was, the one thought above all others pressed down his soul, was the fear that his sin had cut him off from God. In sadness he lay down to rest on the bare earth, around him only the lonely hills, and above, the heavens bright with stars. As he slept, a strange light broke upon his vision; and lo, from the plain on which he lay, vast shadowy stairs seemed to lead upward to the very gates of heaven, and upon them angels of God were passing up and down (Gen 28:12), while from the glory above, the divine voice was heard in a message of comfort and hope. Thus was made known to Jacob that which met the need and longing of his soul—a Saviour. With joy and gratitude he saw revealed a way by which he, a sinner, could be restored to communion with God. The mystic ladder of his dream represented Jesus, the only medium of communication between God and man.



This is the same figure to which Christ referred in His conversation with Nathanael, to whom He said,

"Ye shall see heaven open, and the angels of God ascending and descending upon the Son of man" (John 1:51, K.J.V.).

Earth was cut off from heaven by sin. Across the gulf that lay between, there could be no communion. But with His merits, Christ has bridged the gulf which sin had made, so that the ministering angels can hold communion with man. Christ connects fallen man in his weakness and helplessness with their Father, the Source of infinite power, with His humanity holding man and with His divinity the throne of God. The only way to God is Christ: He is the one and only Saviour of man. He says, "I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by Me." "Come unto Me all ye that labour and are heavy laden: I will give you rest" and lead you to heaven. (John 14:6, K.J.V., Matt. 11:28, K.J.V.).

Behold the cross of Calvary standing between heaven and earth: it is the ladder of our holy Lord Jesus, that connects earthly sinners with God strongly forever. Through it heaven and earth are brought into perfect reunion and restoration.

Glory and praise, thanks and reverence be to our only Saviour and Lord Jesus Christ forever and ever! Praise the Lord!

## 5. Jesus Christ, a Friend of Sinners

"After these things Jesus went forth, and saw a publican, named Levi, sitting at the receipt of custom: and He said unto him, 'Follow Me.' And he left all, rose up, and followed Him." "As Jesus sat at meat in his house, many publicans and sinners sat also together with Jesus and His disciples" (Luke 5:27-28, K.J.V., Mark 2:15, K.J.V.). "But their scribes and Pharisees murmured against His disciples, saying, 'Why do ye eat and drink with publicans and sinners?'" "Behold," Jesus is "a friend of publicans and sinners" (Luke 5:30, K.J.V., Matt. 11:19, K.J.V.).

But when Jesus heard that, He said unto them, "They that be whole need not a physician, but they that are sick. But go ye and learn what that meaneth. 'I will have mercy, and not sacrifice': for I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance" (Matt. 9:12,13, K.J.V.).

The infinitely merciful and compassionate Majesty of heaven who "breaks not a bruised reed nor quenches a dimly burning wick" (Isa. 42:3) did not refuse the kind and warm hospitality of publicans and sinners but gladly accepted it, and was pleased to sit with them at their tables, to eat and have intercourse with them. But He was aware of strict criticism and reproaches from jealous, hypocritical scribes and Pharisees in consequence of His association with these people. But regardless of their criticism, His heart was

drawn to publicans and sinners thirsting for the water of life. He was not concerned with outwardness but with the precious spirits that willingly repent of sin when pointed out, and return to God and obey Him.

He is today also, looking for such people and draws to them to have intercourse with them. He is not concerned with nationality, race, position, wealth and poverty, and high and low. All the children of man upon the earth are equally His precious children and friends.

To all who depart from sin and choose to gladly obey God, He says, "Behold, ... here are My mother and My brothers" (Matt. 12:49). "I tell you, My friends, ... no longer do I call you servants, ... but friends, ... My friends (Luke 12:4, John 15:15). And He adds again, "For you I have shed My blood and given up My life."

What a great number of Christians today are deceiving themselves, like Pharisees of the old, by the spirit of self-righteousness and hypocrisy! Although they do not admit in public, in the sight of God their act says, "God, I thank Thee that I am not like other men, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even like this publican. I fast twice a week, I give tithes of all that I get" (Luke 18:11,12); but to these souls that, without the knowledge of God and the Saviour, indulge in drinking, amusement, robbery, and murder, and cry for salvation in weariness and helplessness to get out of the darkness, for whom Jesus has greatest pity, and seeks to save, they say, "Stand by thyself, come not near to me; for I am holier than thou." But Jesus, say-

ing, "These are a smoke in My nose, a fire that burneth all the day" (Isa. 65:5, K. J. V.), declared that He would pour upon them His wrath.

He says, "A certain creditor had two debtors: one owed five hundred denarii, and the other fifty. When they could not pay, he forgave them both. Now which of them will love him more?" And he answered, "The one, I suppose, to whom he forgave more." And He said, "You have judged rightly" (Luke 7:41-43).

He who committed ten times greater sin and was forgiven will love Him and be loyal to Him more than the one who committed a little sin and was forgiven. Some day a great multitude of the redeemed will stand around the throne of Jesus and praise Him who has cleansed and saved them with His blood; and those who will stand closest to Him will be prostitutes, thieves, and murderers who have committed greatest sins and been pointed at most contemptuously by their neighbors on earth. Jesus has forsaken or given up not even one soul as hopeless however contemptuously one may be shunned from society or tumbling about at the bottom of a cesspool of iniquity or in a den of licentiousness. He says, "What though the whole head was sick and the whole heart faint? What though from the sole of the foot even unto the crown of the head there was no soundness, but wounds and bruises, and putrefying sores? He who had been walking frowardly in the way of his heart might find healing by turning to the Lord." "I have seen his ways, and will heal him...."

Peace, peace to him that is far off, and to him that is near, saith the Lord: and I will heal him" (Isa. 57:18,19, K.J.V.). The heart of Jesus, overflowing with infinite love, who abandoned all heaven to come to save sinners yearns after those who feel powerless to free themselves from the snares of Satan; and He graciously offers to strengthen them to live for Him.

"Fear thou not," Jesus bids them; "I will strengthen thee: yea, I will help thee: I will uphold thee with the hand of My righteousness with which I made heaven and earth." "Fear not, thou worm Jacob, and ye men of Israel: I will help thee, saith the Lord, and thy Redeemer, the Holy One of Israel." In search of thee alone I have forsaken heaven and come to this world of darkness (Isa. 41:10,14, K.J.V.).

It is not because He is reluctant to forgive a sinner but because the sinner persistently refuses to avail himself of abundant provision of His grace that He should turn from the sinner and cannot save him from his sin.

"Behold, the Lord's hand is not shortened, that it cannot save; neither His ear heavy, that it cannot hear; but your iniquities have separated between you and your God, and your sins have hid His face from you, that He will not hear;" and because you have forsaken Me the fountain of living water and persistently refused to come to Me (Isa. 59:1,2, K.J.V., Jer. 2:13).

When many people become wounded or die at the same time due to a sudden traffic accident, they are

all carried to the hospital urgently. There are fewer doctors available to care for all these patients. But they all need doctor's care. Then to whom shall the doctor run first to treat the injury? It must be the one that is most seriously injured lying in a critical condition. Likewise our great Physician Jesus has the greatest pity on sinners most wounded and bruised by transgression among all sinner-patients from the railroad-calamity in the earth-train, who are most alienated from society and receive coldest treatment from the people.

But many people hesitate to come to Him, saying, "I have committed too great, too many sins to be forgiven." These are like those patients who, dying in a critical condition shedding much blood by unfortunate traffic accident, are saying, "Will the doctor not be displeased with me? Will he not scold me for so great wounds?" and indeed losing their lives seized with foolish, useless anxiety.

Today Jesus is still exclaiming toward all the sinful children who are coldly treated and pointed at by the people, "Come unto Me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden: I will give you rest." "I, I am He who blots out your transgressions for My own sake, and I will not remember your sins." I am your Physician, your lovely Friend, your Saviour who abandoned heaven and came down to this world of darkness in order to blot out your sins, heal your body and soul, and to bring you to heaven. Whoever comes to Me,

"I will never cast out..." "I came not to call the righteous, but sinners" (Matt. 11:28, K.J.V., Isa. 43:25, John 6:37, Matt. 9:13).

Praise the Lord! "He hath not beheld iniquity in Jacob, neither hath He seen perverseness in Israel: the Lord his God is with him, and the shout of a king is among them." "Therefore 'blessed is he whose transgression is forgiven, whose sin is covered. Blessed is the man unto whom the Lord imputeth not iniquity, and in whose spirit there is no guile'" (Num 23:21, K.J.V., Ps. 32:1,2, K.J.V.).

"I acknowledged my sin to Thee, and I did not hide my iniquity: I said, 'I will confess my transgressions to the Lord'; then Thou didst forgive the guilt of my sin. Therefore let every one who is godly offer prayer to Thee: at a time of distress, in the rush of great waters, they shall not reach him. Thou art a hiding place for me, Thou preservest me from trouble: Thou dost encompass me with deliverance" (Ps. 32:5-7).

"Behold, 'Jesus is 'a Friend of publicans and sinners'" (Matt. 11:19). As sinners like bruised reed and dimly burning wick accept His invitation and come to Him, He is best pleased and delighted with them. From then on He becomes their Saviour and an unique Friend and the One like a tender mother who "girds herself and lets her servants sit at table, and comes and serves them" (Luke 12:37). And He says to them, "You are 'Our Friends' (John 11:11), 'My Friends' (Luke 12:4): true 'friend loves at all times', Whatever you ask in

My name, I will do it." Whenever "you ask anything in My name, I will do it" (Pro. 17:17, John 14:13, 14). Our amiable and lovely Friend Jesus who is "the same yesterday, today, and forever," "who was received up into heaven, and sat on the right hand of God," is now waiting for our petition, saying, "'All that the Father has is Mine, ask Me for anything'" (Heb. 13:8, Mark 16:19, John 16:15).

Praise the Lord! Glory and praise to Jesus my everlasting Friend who, in order to be a Friend of sinners, had forsaken heaven, and was taken up to heaven as a Friend of sinners, and is now sitting at the right hand of God as my everlasting Friend! Praise the Lord!



## 6. Jesus Christ, a Servant of Man

“The Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give His life a ransom for many” (Matt. 20:28, K.J.V.).

He “rose from supper, laid aside His garment, and girded Himself a towel. Then He poured water into a basin, and began to wash the disciples’ feet, and to wipe them with the towel with which He was girded.” He “loved His own who were in the world. He loved them to the end” (John 13:4, 5, 1).

Jesus, the Majesty of heaven came to this earth as a servant of man, and served man in all his lifetime, carrying his burden of sin and was slain on the cross. This was the whole of His life.

“We see Jesus... crowned with... honour because of the suffering of death, so that... He might taste death for every one (Heb. 2:9). “He poured out His soul to death, and was numbered with the transgressors; yet He bore the sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors” (Isa. 53:12).

Christ, a Servant of man has said, “For this reason the Father loves Me, because I lay down My life, that I may take it again” (John 10:17). He again said to those who would follow Him, “If any man would come after Me, let him deny himself and take up his cross and follow Me” (Matt. 16:24). “If any one comes to Me and does not hate... even his own life, he cannot

be My disciple. Whoever does not bear his own cross and come after Me cannot be My disciple” (Luke 14:26, 27). “If any man serve Me, let him follow Me” (John 12:26, K.J.V.).

“Verily, verily, I say unto you, the servant is not greater than his lord; neither he that is sent greater than he that sent him. If ye know these things, happy are ye if ye do them.” “For I have given you an example, that ye should do as I have done to you.” “If I then, your Lord and Master, have washed your feet” as a servant; “ye also ought to wash one another’s feet” being servants yourselves (John 13:16, 17, 15, 14, K.J.V.).

As neither a disciple is greater than his master nor a servant than his lord, if a disciple lives the life of his master, and a servant, of his lord, they are to be content and happy. The Lord served man as if He had been their servant; and if the servants of the Lord wants to be served by men, how could the humble Lord gladly accept these arrogant servants? The humble Lord might say to His other servants, “Cast the worthless servants into the outer darkness” (Matt. 25:30).

Those who live the life of Jesus are His disciples. His followers are to follow the very path that He passed beforehand. Only as they do so they can meet their Master who already passed before them.

Jesus made it plain how we are to live in this world. “Will any one of you, who has a servant ploughing

or keeping sheep, say to him when he has come in from the field. 'Come at once and sit down at table'? Will he not rather say to him, 'Prepare supper for me, and gird yourself and serve me, till I eat and drink: does he thank the servant because he did what was commanded? So you also, when you have done all that is commanded you, say, 'We are unworthy servants: we have only done what was our duty'' (Luke 17:7-10). This is the sort of life we ought to live on earth as Jesus taught us. This was also the life of our Lord God. Although we have done our best service for the sake of our neighbors and all human race as did our Lord, we are not to expect acknowledgement or reward. On the contrary, we are to serve man as his servants even at the expense of sacrificing our lives, and at last say, 'We are unworthy servants: we have only done what was our duty.' And we should not forget that there is prepared for servants no reward nor recompense however great works they may have accomplished, but rather that only scolding, rebuke, and whip are due for them.

Even the Majesty of heaven, our Lord, when He was on earth, girded Himself, became His disciples' servant, and washed their stinking feet, and also served and healed all sorts of miserable sick people to whom no one wanted to approach. He prepared the table for the hungry multitude in the desert and His disciples helped Him. But He received ridicule, abuse, reproof, whip, and death on a cross with which He finished His life, to say nothing of gratitude, honour, and

praise. This was His life and treatment He received from the world. Now He speaks to you and me who follow Him today, 'If any man serve Me, let him follow Me: and where I am, there shall also My servant be' (John 12:26, K. J. V.).

Jesus' followers are to be on strict guard against self-pity. Never should we indulge the feeling that we are not esteemed as we should be, that our efforts are not appreciated, that our work is too difficult. We should let the memory of what Christ has endured for us silence every murmuring thought. However lightly we may be treated, we are treated better than was our Lord.

Sin originated from self-seeking; the self-respecting belongs to Satan's kingdom.

From the manger to the cross, the life of Jesus was a call to self-surrender, and fellowship in suffering.

The Lord has no place in His work for those who have a greater desire to win the crown than to bear the cross. He wants men who are more intent upon doing their duty than upon receiving their reward—men who are more solicitous for principle than for promotion.

Those who are humble and do their work as unto God may not make so great a show as to those who are full of bustle and self-importance; but their work counts for more. Often those who make a great parade call attention to self, interposing between the people and God, and their work proves a failure.

The most elevated heart in Christians is the power

to give victory to humble followers of Christ; for their humility is the evidence of their communion with heavenly court. "For though the Lord is high. He regards the lowly" (Ps. 138:6). Those who reveal Christ's meekness and humility shall obtain mercy from God. They are of great value in God's sight although they are despised in the world.

Neither to the wise, the great, or the charitable, nor to the ardent, tireless, diligent worker is the pass to heavenly court given. It is fully given to the poor in spirit who long to dwell with Christ, and to the humble in heart whose greatest desire is to do the will of God. They will join the ranks of those who have washed their garments and made themselves white through the blood of the Lamb.

The Lord's disciples shall not cease to manifest the meekness of Christ their holy Example even if they may be brought to the verge of loss, pain, and even death. And by their works their Lord is glorified and exalted before governors and people. Men of Christ shall say to their neighbors. "He must increase, but I must decrease" (John 3:30, K.J.V.), and serve all mankind as a servant serves his lord. They shall live to the world with the spirit of Jesus as He spoke. "The Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give His life a ransom for many" (Matt. 20:28, K.J.V.).

May the glory of Jesus be with His last disciples who live His life by following His steps on earth! Praise the Lord!

## 7. Jesus Christ, a Man of Sorrow

### (1) A Man Betrayed by His Numerous Disciples

A great multitude pressed up to our Lord, every one swearing to be His disciple. And the time came that our Father's mighty hand should winnow them to separate the wheat from the chaff. Now Jesus began His winnowing with His word to gather His wheat into the granary and separate it from the chaff (Matt. 3:12).

He began to say, "Verily, verily, I say unto you... I am that bread of life. Your fathers did eat manna in the wilderness, and are dead. This is the bread which cometh down from heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die. I am the living bread which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live forever: and the bread that I will give is My flesh, which I will give for the life of the world" (John 6:47-51, K.J.V.). The chaffs that were blown away by this first winnowing were the Jews. "The Jews then disputed among themselves, saying, 'How can this man give us His flesh to eat?'... and they departed (John 6:52).

But He did not cease it here but continued His winnowing all the more forcibly to those that remained. Jesus said unto them, "Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink

His blood, ye have no life in you. Whoso eateth My flesh, and drinketh My blood, hath eternal life: and I will raise him up at the last day. For My flesh is meat indeed, and My blood is drink indeed. He that eateth My flesh, and drinketh My blood, dwelleth in Me, and I in him. As the living Father hath sent Me, and I live by the Father: so he that eateth Me, even he shall live by Me. This is that bread which came down from heaven: not as your fathers did eat manna, and are dead: he that eateth of this bread shall live for ever" (John 6:53-58, K.J.V.). And "from that time many of His disciples went back, and walked no more with Him" (John 6:66, K.J.V.).

In this way the great multitude professing to be His disciples themselves rejected Him and departed from Him: and the wheats that remained were merely the shabby twelve. And these twelve disciples also were sitting restlessly, disputing among themselves. "This is a hard saying" (John 6:60).

And Jesus asked them a sad question. "Do you also wish to go away?" (John 6:67). And Simon Peter answered Him. "Lord, to whom shall we go? You have the words of eternal life: and we have believed, and have come to know that you are the Holy One of God" (John 6:68,69).

But in the eyes of the Holy One was seen one more chaff to be blown away among the shabby twelve. "Jesus answered them, 'Did I not choose you, the twelve, and one of you is a devil?' He spoke of Judas the son of Simon Iscariot" (John 6:70,71).

With a yearning heart, Jesus saw those who had once been His disciples departing from Him, the Life and the Light of men. The consciousness that His compassion was unappreciated, His love unrequited, His mercy slighted, His salvation rejected, filled Him with sorrow that was inexpressible. It was such developments as these that made Him a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief. Without attempting to hinder those who were leaving Him, Jesus turned to the twelve and said, "Will ye also go away?" This was the result of His work for which He had laboured day and night, sparing no labor, toil, sacrifice and His service. Therefore the Bible speaks of Him, "I have laboured in vain, I have spent My strength for nought" (Isa. 49:4, K.J.V.).

Oh! who can comprehend our Lord's exceedingly deep sorrow and comfort Him? "No one knows the Son except the Father" (Matt. 11:27).

When Jesus was winnowing the multitude, He told them to eat His flesh and drink His blood. By this He meant that His blood was His sin-atoning blood, and the Holy Spirit that was gushing out from Him unlimitedly, "the rivers of living water" (John 7:38,39), and that His flesh was the bread of the word that proceeded out of His mouth, which was the bread of life to human souls (Matt. 4:4). This interpretation is sure and right for He Himself made it plain in the 6th chapter of John.



"When Jesus knew in Himself that His disciples murmured at it. He said unto them, 'Doth this offend you?' " I will tell you the real meaning. "It is the spirit that revives man's life: the flesh"— My flesh and blood—"profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you,—the living waters of the Holy Spirit (My blood) and the bread of My word (My flesh), they are spirit, and they are life" (John 6:61, 63, K.J.V.). "But there are some of you that do not believe" (John 6:64)

## (2) A Man of Loneliness within His Family Circle

Once He was teaching a great number of people in a house. "and His mother and His brothers came; and standing outside they sent to Him, and called Him" (Mark 3:31), "for people were saying, 'He is beside Himself', 'He has an unclean spirit'" (Mark 3:21,30). Therefore "when His family heard it, they went out to seize Him" (Mark 3:21).

What a dismaying scene it is! How could they go so far in failing to understand Him? Had they not lived with Him for 30 years under one roof, eat at one table together? What is more, had Mary His mother not received angels' direct messages and visions at least several times when she had conceived Him? And how is it that, listening to the voice of the Jews and scribes who had been stirred by Satan the enemy saying, "He is beside Himself and possessed of devil" (Mark 3:21,22), they came to Him making tumult, sending for Him to confine Him at home for recuperation?

Who, in all the world, could understand our Lord's soul-anguish and loneliness? What a heartaching, sad-denying fact it is that His own family who were to surround Him with warmest comfort, encouragement, and profound understanding did not understand Him but on the contrary disturbed His work!

"And a crowd was sitting about Him: and they said to Him, 'Your mother and your brothers are outside, asking for you'" (Mark 3:32). And He replied, "Who are My mother and My brothers?" And looking on those who sat about Him He said, "Here are My mother and brothers! Whoever " knows the will of God and obey and serve Him "is My brother, and sister, and mother. My mother and brothers who are calling Me now outside without knowing the will of God, saying, 'He is mad, possessed of evil spirit,' may be perhaps called My mother and brothers in the flesh, but, considered by heaven's family relationship, they are not My mother and brothers" (Mark 3:33-35).

Sorrowed by inconsiderate understanding at home, He often sought for comfort elsewhere. There was a home at which He was pleased to call frequently: it was the home of Lazarus and Mary and Martha. He found peace in heart in the atmosphere of confidence and love at their home. But there was not one upon the earth who knew and understood His sacred mission and His weighty burden He was to carry for the race. He could find comfort only as He spread out His heart before His heavenly Father in communion with Him.

Therefore I wish all my brethren and sisters who are following our Lord today not to be sorrowed by displeased with family, friends, or fellow believers who do not understand us, but press forward until we get to heaven, remembering Him and keeping our eyes upon our Lord.

### (3) A Man Rejected by the Religious World

When the morning came, all the chief priests and the elders of the people took counsel against Jesus to put Him to death; and they bound Him and led Him away and delivered Him to Pilate the governor" (Matt. 27:1,2).

The religious leaders who had been teaching the Scriptures to the people, who should have most rejoiced at the coming of the Saviour (Messiah) and most enthusiastically welcomed and received Him paradoxically received Him not but hated and rejected Him most fiercely in the lead and were stirred up to put Him to death: in reality, theirs was a religion of formalism and hypocrisy; and what is more, the blind religious leaders who have gone up and down the pulpit like the theatrical actors have constituted the miserable and deplorable world of religion today since ancient days.

What a great, painstaking effort Jesus put forth two thousand years ago to arouse and return them! But having been rejected persistently by them, He left for Golgotha wailing aloud, "O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou

that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings and ye would not!" (Matt. 23:37, K.J.V.).

Our Jesus who wept and lamented over Jerusalem two thousand years ago is now weeping and wailing over the earth of today. He drew near the earth and is weeping over it, saying, "If thou hadst known, even thou, at least in this thy day, the things which belong unto thy peace! but now they are hid from thine eyes" (Luke 19:41,42, K.J.V.).

"He" or a church "that hath an ear, let him hear" Jesus weeping over the earth! (Rev. 2:11).

"Verily, verily, I say unto you, "... the churches that "hear the voice of the Son of God" and repent "shall live" at the day of the world's destruction (John 5:25).

Jesus, the Saviour of man from heaven has been betrayed and rejected by the religious world and its leaders yesterday and today. That is why He cannot have close access to His beloved children but is only wandering around them weeping and wailing. Ah! we need today such religious world and leaders as will receive Jesus! This earth needs them!

### (4) Our Jesus Betrayed by Judas His Disciple

Our Lord had not called nor chosen Judas, but He earnestly endeavored to return him and lead him to repentance. And especially because he was more at-

ached to riches than were other disciples. He entrusted him with the money bag in giving him opportunity to help the poor and needy in order to help him remove his selfishness and cultivate a spirit of charity and sympathy. But ignoring his Master's earnest wish toward him, and helping himself to what was put into the money bag, he was declared before God that "he was a thief, and as he had the money box he used to take what was put into it" (John 12:6).

Once he loved the Great Teacher and felt a desire to have his harsh character and life changed but did not cooperate with his Master in His labour to mold his character by surrendering himself to Him, and began to walk the path of a straggler by cherishing worldly ambition of position and fame and love of money and persisting the spirit of criticism and accuse. Always comparing himself with other disciples, he flattered himself that the church would often be brought into perplexity and embarrassment, and the work of God would meet the difficulty if it were not for himself. In this way, while other disciples were striving to empty their hearts for transformation of character, he was, providing a good, advantageous ground for the enemy by always exalting himself. Even when he returned having made pledge to sell his holy Master with thirty coins of silver as a price of a slave, Jesus persistently and earnestly endeavored to the end to return him to repentance. As He was washing Judas' feet year-

ningly, so obstinate heart of Judas waved violently like the waves of the rolling sea for a time by the influence of the Holy Spirit and felt the urge to repent, but persisting in his course of apostasy, he finally lost his golden opportunity.

And in a few minutes he walked out on his feet that his Master had washed with love to accomplish his purpose of delivering his Master. He acted as an agent and a guide to lead the wicked men carrying weapons and cudgels and clubs to capture Jesus. And in front of His beloved disciple, Jesus was bound and led away. This was the treatment that our Lord received from Judas until the end.

#### (5) Our Jesus Betrayed by Peter His Disciple

"But Peter denied it before them all, saying, 'I do not know what you mean'" (Matt. 26:70).

Had not Jesus poured upon Peter best love and affection and treated him as the best disciple? And now he is denying his Master before all people, saying, "I do not even know what it means when you say I am one of His disciples." How do you think our Lord felt in His heart when hearing this word from His beloved disciple?

Again from Peter's lips was spoken all the more positive word of betrayal. "And again he denied it with an oath, 'I do not know the man'" (Matt. 26:72).

O Peter! Have you not, just a few days ago, confessed to Him with your lips that He was the Christ, the Son

of the living God, the Second Person of the triune God in heaven? (Matt. 16:16). And now how is it that you degrade "the Christ" to "a man" and deny Him with an oath, saying, "I do not know <the man>"? What made you so stingy as to refuse to give Him a proper treatment even as a human master, and what could break the intimate relationship between you and your Master? Who could make you forsake your Master's love so lightly that has been thicker than blood and stronger than death to you? Is this all that you can render to your Master, your God who has forsaken heaven and come down to find you?

After a little while a louder and more blunt answer came out from Peter's mouth. "Then he began to invoke a curse on himself and to swear, 'I do not know the man'" (Matt. 26:74).

O how can it be! Were it not you, Simon Peter, who swore with big talk just a while ago, saying, "Though they all fall away because of you, I will never fall away"? (Matt. 26:33). Has your Lord not chosen you to be one of the three best disciples, and given you the privilege to see the Father's glory and the holy men Moses and Elijah on the mount of Transfiguration, and put special confidence in you and asked to pray for Him on the Garden of Gethsemane? And this is your recompense for His love and grace? O you wretched disciple! Wretched Peter!...

This is all that our Lord Jesus had received from the world and from His disciples until His last hour.

#### (6) Our Jesus Betrayed by All the World

"He was in the world, and the world was made by Him, and the world knew Him not. He came unto His own, and His own received Him not..." "They all said unto Him, 'Let Him be crucified'" (John 1:10, 11, K.J.V., Matt. 27:22,23, K.J.V.).

"Then answered all the people, and said, 'His blood be on us, and on our children... And... Jesus...'" was "delivered to be crucified" (Matt. 27:25,26, K.J.V.).

This was the treatment that Jesus received from the world who had loved the world so much and abandoned His heaven's ivory palace and come down to save the world. But He "loved His own who were in the world. He loved them to the end," and prayed for them who were crucifying Himself, saying, "Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do..." And having said this He breathed His last" (John 13:1, Luke 23:34,46).

This was His last hour upon the earth and treatment He received from the world that He loved to the end although they did not love Him.

As He came to save the world as a baby, He had to borrow a stall, for the earth did not provide Him a room, and soon after to be a fugitive escaping from the sword of the wicked king Herod. In His childhood, growing up in an unfortunate family, He could have not one carefree day for rest, supplying living expenses of His family and getting all kinds of harsh and scornful treatments and hatred from His step-brothers. But



He never spoke a word of complaint about His step-brothers or a word of murmur in His daily toilsome labor. As a child, Jesus lived a life of loneliness who received constant misunderstanding and contempt from His family, and after He began His public ministry He had to go through constant pain from rejection and betrayal even by His professed disciples. In the end He was ostracized by the joint force of all the world and ended His life crucified on a cross; indeed His life was a succession of insult and contempt, loneliness and sorrow, and persecution. The world had indeed no place for Him as He said, "The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air have nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay His head in the world" (Matt. 8:20, K.J.V.).

The life of Jesus we have learned so far in six phases is the path that we, His disciples of today, are to follow.

Praise the Lord! May peace and joy be with all the disciples who clearly know their Lord's way and follow Him!

Praise the Lord!

## 8. Wealth and Poverty of Jesus on Earth

### (1) Poverty of Jesus

Jesus whose dominion extended over all the universe came to this earth and wandered around without His own nation. "Jesus answered, 'My kingdom is not of this world'" (John 18:36, K.J.V.).

Our Saviour whose home was all the universe and had the entire heaven as His dwelling place, had no where to lay His head when He came to this earth and wandered from place to place. He said, "The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air have nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay His head" (Matt. 8:20, K.J.V.).

As the Owner of all the treasures of the universe, who had said, "The silver is Mine, and the gold is Mine" (Hag. 2:8), He led a life of extreme poverty even without a penny in His pocket when He came to this earth. He said, "Go to the sea and cast a hook, and take the first fish that comes up, and when you open its mouth you will find a shekel; take that and give it to them for Me and for yourself" (Matt. 17:26,27). Though He was the Lord of heaven who had been "giving all men everything" (Acts 17:25), He was scarce of bread and frequently went hungry, sometimes even skipping both breakfast and supper. One day, after skipping His breakfast "in the morning, as He

was returning to the city. He was hungry. And seeing a fig tree by the wayside He went to it<sup>1</sup> to find some figs to relieve His hunger "but found nothing on it but leaves only" (Matt. 21:18, 19). And one evening as He was walking across the grainfields with His disciples, having skipped that supper, they plucked heads of grain to relieve their extreme hunger. "Jesus went through the grainfields on the sabbath; His disciples were hungry, and they began to pluck heads of grain and to eat" (Matt. 12:1). But then Jesus did not even eat the grain. And during His earthly ministry for His children He had not ridden a horse or an ass once. Regardless of the distance He always traveled on foot and was often "wearied with His journey" (John 4:6), with the exception of only one occasion when He, on His last journey, rode on a borrowed ass in order to fulfil the Scriptures. "Jesus, wearied as He was with His journey, sat down beside the well. It was about the sixth hour. There came a woman of Samaria to draw water." and He met her (John 4:6,7).

A woman cast out from the world, worthless and insignificant as she was in the sight of men, given in marriage five times and now living with someone's husband subject to her adverse fortune, in order to reclaim this one afflicted and lost sheep of His, our Lord walked about thirty two kilometers (some 20 miles) and was very thirsty and hungry. But when found the woman, one lost sheep of His, He was filled with joy and gladness forgetting His thirst and

hunger. And His disciples brought Him food and said, "Rabbi, eat." But He said to them, "I have food to eat of which you do not know." Then His disciples said to each other, "Has anyone brought Him food?" But there was no one who had given Him food (John 4:31,32).

Besides these, we do know well that He once starved for forty days in the wilderness for the sake of His children that had been fallen by the power of appetite. By these facts, we can see that His life was the succession of poverty and hunger. But He never prayed nor spoke a word of care concerning His own poverty, His food, clothing and shelter. He never prayed, thought and shed tears, but for others.

"You know the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ that though He was rich, yet for your sake He became poor, so that by His poverty you might become rich (2 Cor. 8:9).

What is more, He was always persecuted and despised. "If they persecuted Me, they will persecute you." He said (John 15:20).

When He was being dragged with the heavy cross upon His shoulders to be slain under false accusation, "there followed Him a great multitude of the people and of women who bewailed and lamented Him. But Jesus turning to them said, 'Daughters of Jerusalem, do not weep for Me.' " He loved them exceedingly and said, "Weep for yourselves and for your children." and went on (Luke 23:27,28). Even then He was getting dragged in an empty stomach after having gone without food

for many days. He "loved His own who were in the world. He loved them to the end" (John 13:1). After all. He died in hunger. "Father, into Thy hands I commit My spirit!" And He breathed His last (Luke 23:46).

Though He was the richest in the universe, yet for His children's sake He became the poorest, so that by His poverty they might become rich (2 Cor. 8:9).

By His poverty we became rich.

By His hunger we became satisfied.

By His misery we became happy.

By His chastisement we have peace.

By His bruise we are healed.

By His wound we became healthy.

By His sorrow we have joy.

By His tear we can smile.

By His wailing we can sing praises.

By His captivity we have been made free.

By His humiliation we have become noble.

By His exceeding lowliness we have been brought up to God's throne.

By His insult we are glorified.

By His death we have found eternal life.

Because He went down to the grave we are privileged to see the glorious morning of resurrection.

Oh, immeasurable is the grace of our Lord Jesus!

Beyond all comparison with the heavens, with the sea, with the firmament!

Not by pen, nor by word, nor by anything can it be described!

Not by pen, nor by word, nor by anything can it be described!

"They are higher than the heavens—what can you do? They are deeper than the depths of the grave—what can you know?" (Job, 11:8, N.I.V.). What can I do but to give Him ceaseless thanks wiping away my tears pouring forth from my eyes with my hands?

## (2) Wealth of Jesus

\* He was rich in love. "I and the Father are one," and "God is love" (John 10:30, 4:8). "By this we know love, that He laid down His life for us" (1 John 3:16).

\* He was rich in mercy. "I am a Good Shepherd... I lay down My life for the sheep" (John 10:14,15).

"When He saw the crowds, He had compassion for them, because they were harassed and helpless, like sheep without a shepherd." "He had compassion on them,... and He began to teach them many things" (Matt. 9:36, Mark 6:34).

\* He was rich in humility. He, "though He was in the form of God, did not count equality with God a thing to be grasped, but emptied Himself, taking the form of a servant, being born in the likeness of men. And being found in human form He humbled Himself and became obedient unto death, even death on the cross" (Phi. 2:6-8).

\* He was rich in faith. "Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on Me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do."

"All things are possible to him who believes" (John 14:12, K.J.V., Mark 9:23).

\* He was rich in the Holy Spirit. "God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Spirit... He went about doing good and healing all that were oppressed by the devil" (Acts 10:38).

\* He was rich in power. "God anointed Jesus of Nazareth... with power..." "Jesus" perceived "in Himself that power had gone forth from Him" (Acts 10:38, Mark 5:30).

\* He was rich in authority. "All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to Me..." "I have given you authority... over all the power of the enemy; and nothing shall hurt you" (Matt. 28:18, Luke 10:19).

\* He was rich in living water. "If any man thirst, let him come unto Me, and drink. He that believeth on Me... out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water..." "But whoever drinks of the water that I shall give him will never thirst; the water that I shall give him will become in him a spring of water welling up to eternal life" (John 7:37,38, K.J.V., 4:14).

\* He was rich in the light of life. "I am the light of the world; He who follows Me will not walk in darkness, but will have the light of life" (John 8:12).

\* He was rich in the bread (food) of life. "Do not labour for the food which perishes, but for the food which endures to eternal life, which the Son of man will give to you" (John 6:27). "I am the bread of life; he who comes to Me shall not hunger" (John 6:35).

\* He was rich in all things in the universe. "All that the Father has is Mine..." "Whatever you ask in My name, I will do it" (John 16:15, 14:13,14).

In conclusion, our Lord Jesus was the poorest in the world of sin, and richest before God in the universe. He said, "If any one serves Me, he must follow Me" (John 12:26). "A servant is not greater than his master, nor is he who is sent greater than he who sent him..." "Do not love the world or the things in the world. If any one loves the world, love for the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh and the lust of the eyes and the pride of life, is not of the Father but is of the world" (John 13:16,1 John 2:15,16).

"If any man would come after Me, let him deny himself and take up his cross and follow Me" (Mark 8:34). "If any one comes to Me and does not hate his own father and mother and wife and children and brothers and sisters, yes, and even his own life, he cannot be My disciple..." "Whoever of you does not renounce all that he has cannot be My disciple" (Luke 14:26,33).

"Truly, I say to you, there is no man who has left house or wife or brothers or parents or children, for the sake of the kingdom of God, who will not receive manifold more in this time, and in the age to come eternal life..."

"Truly, I say to you, there is no one who has left house or brothers or sisters or mother or father or children or lands, for My sake and for the gospel, who will not receive an hundredfold now in this time, houses and brothers and sisters and mothers and



children and lands, with persecutions, and in the age to come eternal life" (Luke 18:29,30, Mark 10:29,30).  
<Reference: Mark 12:50, Luke 22:35, Num. 11:23, 2 Cor 9:8,9>

He who loves his life loses it, and he who hates his life in this world will keep it for eternal life" (John 12:25).

"Truly, truly, I say to you, . . . a disciple is not above his teacher, nor a servant above his master: it is enough for the disciple to be like his teacher, and the servant like his master. . . . If you know these things, blessed are you if you do them" (John 13:16,17, Matt. 10:24,25).

"If any one serves Me, he must follow Me: and where I am, there shall My servant be also: if any one serves Me, the Father will honour him" (John 12:26).

Praise the Lord! May eternal riches and glory be with the followers of Jesus! Amen. Praise the Lord!

### 9. Jesus the Nazarite, a Faithful Servant of God

"He was faithful to Him who appointed Him, just as Moses also was faithful in God's house" (Heb.3:2).

It is written concerning Moses in the Bible.—"There has not arisen a prophet since in Israel like Moses, whom the Lord knew face to face, none like him for all the signs and the wonders which the Lord sent him to do in the land of Egypt, to Pharaoh and to all his servants and to all his land, and for all the mighty power and all the great and terrible deeds which Moses wrought in the sight of all Israel" (Deut. 34:10-12).

"Now the man Moses was very meek, more than all men that were on the face of the earth" (Num. 12:3).

"The Lord used to speak to Moses face to face, as a man speaks to his friend" (Ex. 33:11).

Among all the prophets and servants of God that have arisen down through the ages since the beginning, there has not been one like Moses who talked with God face to face and worked great miracles except Jesus. As God had descended on Mt. Sinai to meet with Moses, He descended again before the people when Jesus came out of the water being baptized, and proclaimed, "This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased" (Matt. 3:17), and sent down Moses and Elijah to meet with Him on Mount of Transfiguration, and declared, "This is My beloved Son, with whom I am well pleased: listen to Him" (Matt. 17:5). Then

His face shone like the sun as Moses' face had shone after his contact with God on Mt. Sinai (Matt. 17:2). And as Moses had experienced a face to face communion with God as with a friend before he went to Egypt and worked great miracles there, so did Jesus commune with His Father at dawn every morning before He went out to work great miracles and wonders in the world.

Therefore the Bible bears testimony of Him, saying,

"He was faithful to Him who appointed Him, just as Moses also was faithful in God's house" (Heb. 3:2).

Being the greatest prophet as he was though, Moses cannot be compared with Jesus. "Jesus has been counted worthy of as much more glory than Moses as the builder of a house has more honour than the house" (Heb. 3:3).

If Moses were accounted to be a house, Jesus would be the Master who built the house; because Moses was a creature created by Jesus, while Jesus is the Creator God who had endowed him his body and life. And "Moses was faithful in all God's house as a servant.... but Christ was faithful over God's house as a Son" (Heb. 3:5,6).

While Moses had been a servant of God who served Him for a time, Jesus was "equal" with Him, being "the brightness of His glory and the express image of His Person," and sitting "at the right hand of the Majesty of heaven." Jesus was the unique partner of God and His Son to discuss all sorts of matters like making

the worlds, the plan of redemption of man and administering the affairs of all the universe. (Phi. 2:6, Heb. 1:3, 2).

For this reason Satan cherished dissatisfaction and rose in rebellion. As he saw God and Jesus having council and converse with each other in regard to all the affairs of the universe, he desired to join Them. He said in his heart, "I will ascend to heaven: above the stars of God I will set my throne on high: I will sit on the mount of assembly" of God "in the far north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds. I will make myself like the Most High" (Isa. 14:13, 14). But the Bible says, "Shall the axe vaunt itself over him who hews with it, or the saw magnify itself against him who wields it? As if a rod should wield him who lifts it, or as if a staff should lift him who is not wood" (Isa. 10:15). "Woe unto him, who strives with his Maker, an earthen vessel with the potter! Does the clay say to him who fashions it, 'What are you making?' or 'Your work has no handles'?" (Isa. 45:9). This is a comment directed at the unreasonableness of Satan's act in cherishing envy of Jesus who was his Creator, harboring a grudge and making a complaint about the way God handles His affairs and rising in rebellion against Him.

Although he, by persisting his course, has been "brought down to the grave, to the depths of the pit" (Isa. 14:15, N.I.V.), he still keeps on doing his wicked works today striving to implant his presumptuous evil

ideas into the minds of men, and we are to be on strict guard against him. Envy, covetousness, backbiting, self-exaltation, criticism and reproach upon others are not to be allowed to take the least part of our hearts or pass our lips; for those who do these things are servants of Satan and his possessions.

Now back to the story of Jesus the Son of God. Our lofty Jesus stands in exact contrast with Satan. On His throne in heaven or on earth alike He was always meek and humble in heart and never displayed Himself as the Son of God of the universe, and as the Prince of the universe who had consulted with God about all the affairs of the universe. Rather He took a pleasure in doing God's will, as a little son in God's house, or even as a man of Nazareth, Jesus. He calmly spoke,

"I have come down from heaven, not to do My own will, but the will of Him who sent Me" (John 6:38). He never spoke a word nor did anything at His own will but in perfect accordance with what God told Him to do who had sent Him. "I have not spoken of Myself; but the Father which sent Me. He gave Me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak... Whatsoever I speak therefore, even as the Father said unto Me, so I speak" (John 12:49, 50, K.J.V.). "When ye have lifted up the Son of men, then shall ye know... that I do nothing of Myself; but as My Father hath taught Me, I speak these things" (John 8:28, K.J.V.).

When Jesus the Son of God the Nazarite saw and

heard the deeds and words of man He did not draw a conclusion or judge them on His own, and God spoke of Him, "Who is blind but My Servant?... He sees many things, but does not observe them: His ears are open, but He does not hear" (Isa. 42:19, 20).

The Nazarite chose the wisest and the most safe way: He said, "I can of Mine ownself do nothing; as I hear" from the Father. "I judge; and My judgement is just; because I seek not Mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent Me" (John 5:30, K.J.V.).

What a wise and thoughtful course the Nazarite Jesus chose! For this reason, He did not make a single mistake or commit a sin. He put all His trust in His perfect and omniscient Father, and in perfect accordance with what the Father said to Him He believed, concluded and judged all things. And there was no way He could thoughtlessly be led to a situation liable to cause Him to make a mistake or commit sin. On this wise He could become the sinless Saviour by being the only and the first sinless Person since the beginning. If we as His followers also, as did Jesus the Nazarite, decide not to live according to our own idea, thought and judgment but choose to trust God wholly and act and judge according to what He says to us, we can also live "a life without sin" (Heb. 9:28).

Because the Nazarite Jesus was "one with God" (John 10:30), living hidden under the wings of His power, all evil powers of Satan could have nothing to do with Him. "He who had sent Me is with Me" (John

8:29). said He surrounded by the safe fortress of God.

He who followed such a wise course of life also lived solely for the glory of God and became a person who most pleased and glorified Him on earth, and He could say, "He has not left Me alone, for I always do what is pleasing to Him" (John 8:29). Truly He was the Son of God, Jesus the Nazarite, who was indeed worthy of hearing the voice from heaven—"This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased" (Matt. 17:5). We are to follow His example of life of wisdom at any cost, for this is the only "way" to sinless life, leading us to God (John 14:6).

"Therefore, holy brethren, who share in a heavenly call... consider Jesus." "In the days of His flesh, ... although He was a Son, He learned obedience, ... and being made perfect He became the source of eternal salvation to all who obey Him" (Heb. 3:1, 5:7-9).

·Praise the Lord! Glory and praise and thanksgiving to our Lord Jesus who has taught us the only way for salvation with His example of obedience! Praise the Lord!

### 10. Jesus Christ, a Man of Prayer

"In the days of His flesh, Jesus offered up prayers and supplications, with loud cries and tears" (Heb. 5:7). When He took human nature, He was as helpless a man of Nazareth as we are. He was indeed a man, Jesus of Nazareth who was, just as we are, subject to hunger when starved, pain when beaten, weariness when He walked a lot, exhaustion when overworked, pain when injured shedding blood, and death if any one would kill Him. That is why He became an unwaried suppliant who offered petitions to God night after night in order to receive new supply of power. In order to come forth braced for duty to save the world and overcome trials brought by Satan's ceaseless challenges, He had to receive from His Father fresh supplies of strength and power. Therefore every morning He spent hours with His Father to receive fresh baptism of the Holy Spirit that He might impart the bread of life and light of life to men. And He held unceasing communion with His Father through unceasing prayer. Prayer was, to the Nazarite, the source of strength and the key to His mysterious power that flowed out from Him. "In the days of His flesh, Jesus offered up prayers and supplications, with loud cries and tears, to Him who was able to save Him from death, and He was heard for His godly fear" (Heb. 5:7).



If He had neglected prayer, He could not have become the Saviour of the world or the Conqueror over the power of Satan: He might have become an eternal loser. It was His prayer that made the Man of Nazareth a powerful Conqueror and the glorious Saviour.

**\* As He was praying, the heaven was opened.**

"When Jesus... had been baptized and was praying, the heaven was opened" (Luke 3:21).

**\* As He was praying, the Holy Spirit descended upon Him.**

"When Jesus... was praying... the Holy Spirit descended upon Him in bodily form, as a dove" (Luke 3:21, 22).

**\* As He was praying, the voice of God was heard.**

"When Jesus... was praying... a voice came from heaven, 'Thou art My beloved Son: with Thee I am well pleased'" (Luke 3:21, 22).

**\* As He was praying, His appearance changed.**

"As He was praying, the appearance of His face changed... and became as bright as a flash of lightning" (Luke 9:29).

**\* By prayer He received power to cast out devil.**

"And in the morning, rising up a great while before day, He went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed... And He preached in their synagogues throughout all Galilee, and cast out devils" (Mark 1:35, 39).

Every morning hours of prayer was of the greatest importance to Jesus: During these extremely important early morning hours He held communion with His Father, and received full strength, power and light. After these hours of prayer, He went about, casting out devil, setting free all that had been oppressed by Satan. But His disciples were different. In early mornings they would be mostly in deep sleep and wake up late in the morning, and even when praying in some early mornings they used to mutter a few words and give up contrary to their Master. Yet they desired to possess their Master's power to cast out devil, but they could not. Once they came to Jesus "and asked Him privately, 'Why could we not cast it out?'" (Mark 9:28). And He said to them, "This kind can come out only by prayer" (Mark 9:29, N.I.V.). To say again, "As long as you keep snoring at dawn every morning, such powers cannot come forth from you. And you cannot drive out the demon." This was a solemn rebuke to the disciples who neglected prayer.

Yet He spoke again, "Verily, verily I say unto you, he that believeth on Me, the works that I do shall he do also: and greater works than these shall he do"

[John 14:12. K.J.V.]. To say again, Truly I say to you, if you were as fervent in prayer as I am, the power that comes out from Me would come out from you. And do "greater works than these"; that is, you will be able to cover greater region than I did to exercise powers, travelling to the uttermost part of the earth. And late after His ascension they found out that the source of the power of their Master had been in His prayers. He had used to offer at every night, every dawn and always, and began to "devote themselves to prayer" (Acts. 1:14), and at last they became second Jesuses as their Master had said (John 14:12), and went out into the world and set free all that had been oppressed by devil and all the sick. "Many wonders and signs were done through the apostles." "And the disciples went out and preached everywhere, and the Lord worked with them and confirmed His word by the signs that accompanied it" (Acts 2:43, Mark 16:20, N.I.V.).

**\* As He prayed, great miracles followed Him.**

"After He had dismissed the crowds, He went up on the mountain by Himself to pray. When evening came, He was there alone... And in the fourth watch of the night He came to them, walking on the sea" (Matt. 14:23, 25).

**\* By fasting and prayer He overcame Satan.**

"Then Jesus was led up by the Spirit into the

wilderness... And He fasted" and prayed "forty days and forty nights" (Matt. 4:1, 2). "And afterward... the tempter came... to Him" (Matt. 4:2, 3). But He defeated him completely in his threefold challenges (Matt. 4:3-10). "Then the devil left Him, and behold, angels came and ministered to Him" (Matt. 4:11).

**\* By His prayer the disciples were saved.**

"Behold, Satan demanded to have you, that he might sift you like wheat, but I have prayed for you that your faith may not fail" (Luke 22:31, 32).

**\* By His prayer the world was saved.**

In the Garden of Gethsemane, "being in an agony He prayed more earnestly; and His sweat became like great drops of blood falling upon the ground" (Luke 22:44). "And Jesus" on the cross "said, 'Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do'" (Luke 23:34).

**\* After all night prayer, He chose His disciples.**

"He went out to the mountain to pray; and all night He continued in prayer to God. And it was day, He called His disciples, and chose from them twelve, whom He named apostles" (Luke 6:12, 13).

**\* He finished His daily work in prayer.**

"After He had dismissed the crowds, He went up on the mountain by Himself to pray" (Matt. 14:23).

**\* Prayer-hours of greater importance than multitudes (hearers)**

"The news about Him spread all the more, so that crowds of people came to hear Him and to be healed of their sickness. But Jesus often withdrew to lonely places and prayed" (Luke 5:15, 16, N.I.V.).

**\* His habitual life of prayer**

"He... went, as was His custom, to the Mount of Olives;... And when He came to the place,... He knelt down and prayed" (Luke 22:39-41).

Indeed, prayer was to Jesus the Nazarite the only source of His strength, channel of power, secret of victory, communion with God, and a life of safety in God, which made Him victorious and great and the glorious Saviour.

And if the Saviour of men the Son of God felt the need of prayer, how much more should feeble, sinful mortals feel the necessity of fervent, constant prayer?

A life of fervent and diligent prayer is one of the most indispensable duties of God's children. If we would follow Him, we have no other way but to follow the path Jesus passed before us by praying. In order that we may overcome like Jesus we are also to pray as He prayed. Prayer is the key in the hand of faith that unlocks heaven's storehouse, where are treasured the boundless resources of Omnipotence. It enables us to draw from it heaven's riches, powers, wisdom, strength, and God (the Holy Spirit).

Without prayer we can receive nothing from God; and He cannot give anything to those who desire nothing. "Ask, and it will be given you... For every one who asks receives" (Matt. 7:7, 8).

To those who pray today just as Jesus the Nazarite prayed, heaven will be opened, the Holy Spirit will be given, and the voice of God will be heard from heaven. Their appearance and character will be transformed into the image of God and shine brightly. Great powers and miracles of God will accompany them; and by them all sinners of the world will be saved. Yet they will not be satisfied here but press closer to God and enjoy hours of being together with Him, which no one can interrupt. They hold joyful communion with Him at dawn every morning and every night embraced in His bosom. And keeping in close, ceaseless connection with Him in their daily duties of life, they walk with him like Enoch did. And as they at times fast and pray through night, He will answer to their earnest petitions with the fullness of His grace and abundant gifts of love.

But those who offer formal, lifeless prayers occasionally will be in danger of skepticism, unbelief, inviting darkness into their souls. Prayer is to be fervent and earnest with firm assurance, persisting until it is answered from heaven. Such prayer will surely increase the prayer's faith, joy, happiness, and rewards more and more, and enable him to enter heaven sufficiently.

He who prays is a man of power.  
he who prays is a man of happiness.  
he who prays is a man who meets God.  
he who prays is a witness for God.  
he who prays is a man walking with God.  
he who prays is a man like Christ.  
he who prays is a man who will live forever in the house of God.

He who does not pray is a man of incompetence.  
he who does not pray is a man of misery.  
he who does not pray is a man who cannot glorify God.  
he who does not pray is a man who denies God.  
he who does not pray is a man who worries God.  
he who does not pray is a man separated from God.  
he who does not pray is a man who cannot be sanctified forever.  
he who does not pray will never enter the house of God forever.

Glory and praise and thanksgiving to our Lord Jesus who has shown us the only "way" (John 14:6) to heaven and an example of prayer! Praise the Lord!

### 11. Jesus Christ Who Destroyed the Prison-gate of Death

"O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death?" (Rom. 7:24, K.J.V.). This has been the cry of all the mankind imprisoned behind "the gates of death..." "the doors of the shadow of death" that Satan had made (Job 38:17).

There is not one in heaven and on earth and under the earth who is able to open or shut or destroy this prison-gate of death. This gate of hell is such a dreadful and strong a gate of death that it cannot be opened or shut by any mighty angel or even by ten thousand times ten thousand and thousand of thousands of angels in heaven. "O who will deliver me from this gate of death?"

At this time "the Son of God was manifested" on earth who alone "has the keys of hell and of death" in the universe. "that He might destroy the works of the devil" (Rev. 1:18, 1 John 3:18, K.J.V.).

This courageous Son of God has once had a fierce battle in heaven with the devil Satan, the dreadful rival; and He has an experience of victory over him. "There was war in heaven: Michael (Christ) and His angels fought against the dragon (Satan); and the dragon fought and his angels, and prevailed not: neither was their place found any more in heaven. And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil,



and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him" (Rev. 12:7-9, K.J.V.).

Thus when Jesus the Son of God came to this earth, He had to again fight a bloody and desperate battle with the enemy "that had the power of death, that is, the devil" (Heb. 2:14, K.J.V.), for the enemy still laid strong hold on "the gates of death" on earth.

When "the strong one," Satan and his innumerable angels "fully armed, guards his own palace, his goods are in peace; but when One stronger than he," Jesus the Son of God, "assails him and overcomes him, He takes away his armour in which he trusted,"—his sting of death and the gates of death and all his authorities (Luke 11:21, 22). For this reason, although he had once been driven out from heaven defeated by Jesus, he was now determined to defend the earth, his final fortress, desperately and was waiting for Him the Son of God to appear.

When man had been sunken in the pit of Satan in the beginning, God declared to Satan, "I will put enmity between thee (Satan) and the woman... and her seed (Jesus)... shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise His heel" (Gen. 3:15, K.J.V.). As he heard this declaration he perceived that Jesus the Son of God would surely appear again on this earth, and since then he began to make his elaborate preparation for battle against Him.

At last four thousand years had passed, the Son of

11. Jesus Christ Who Destroyed the  
Prison-gate of Death

God appeared as a little, helpless baby in Bethlehem in the land of Judea all alone, partaking of human nature. He came with a body and mind that had degenerated for thousands of years. Satan was much delighted at the fact. And being elated by his full confidence for his warranted victory this time, he mobilized Herod's army and sword and set to work his first scheme to get rid of Jesus by killing all babies under the age of two in Bethlehem. But just before the crisis He received a desperate help from an angel and was able to escape to Egypt. (Matt. 2:13)

Having failed here, he again attempted to defeat Him after He reached maturity when He was exhausted after 40 days of fasting in the wilderness. But here alike the Son of God courageously gained victory over him with ease and without a mistake in each of his three challenges. (Matt. 4:1-11)

Since then the enemy persistently followed Him every hour, everyday seeking chances to overcome Him, adopting all direct and indirect means and mobilizing all Jewish religious leaders, wicked mobs, and all authorities. But the valiant Son of God won every battle calmly without showing a blunder or a mistake. Irritated as he was, he now attempted to thrust the soul of the Son of God into a terrible agony and temptation twisting His soul. Then the Son of God, after three times of struggle and cry of agony, perspired blood-like sweat and fell exhausted on the ground. But He gained perfect victory in this battle too. (Matt. 26:36-44, Luke 22:44)

Now the final battleground where Satan put all his strength was from Pilate's judgment to Calvary. But here too Jesus, the Son of God, gained a splendid victory. Regrettably He died a glorious death on this bloody battleground. But the blood He shed while sacrificing His life would even more thoroughly and completely destroy the prison-gate of death that had confined all the race and set them free more perfectly than when He was alive. He declared, "It is finished." "I have overcome the world" (John 19:30, 16:33).

"Therefore, holy brethren, who share in a heavenly call, consider Jesus, the Apostle and High Priest of our confession" (Heb. 3:1).

Behold the Son of God who appeared bravely as a new-born baby in the midst of the enemy's territory, the dreadful fortress of death that were full of spears and swords of the enemies, where the banner of the enemy was fluttering. His example of valor and courage is what we are to possess when marching forward to fight with the enemy.

As He starved for forty days "His appearance was so marred, beyond human semblance, and His form beyond that of the sons of men" (Isa. 52:14), and was exhausted; yet He showed us an example by displaying His valor and combativeness in times of extreme physical exhaustion in moving forward to encounter the enemy and win victory after victory. And Jesus, the Lamb of God calmly maintained heaven's sacred peace and meekness, exercising self-restraint, self-denial, and patience stronger than death before insult.

contempt, false accusation, violence, and death that are unbearable to any man and neither yielded nor bowed down to the enemy in the least degree but gained victory to the last minute. And this courageous battle our Saviour fought with His fine character is to be the theme of our meditation.

Let us also "resist the devil," "think no evil, rejoice not in iniquity, but rejoice in the truth, bearing all things, believing all things,.... enduring all things," and gain victory "by every word that proceeds from the mouth of God" (James 4:7, 1 Cor. 13:6, 7, Matt. 4:4).

"For to this you have been called, that you may obtain a blessing" (1 Peter 3:9). Jesus, the Son of God is now speaking to us: "The Son of man came,...." that through death He might destroy him who has the power of death, that is, the devil, and deliver all those who through fear of death were subject to lifelong bondage"; "let not your hearts be troubled,...." "Be of good cheer, I have overcome the world,...." "Fear not, I am the first and the last, and the Living One; I died, and behold I am alive forevermore, and I have the keys of Death and Hades,...." "Nothing shall hurt you,...." "I will ransom them from the power of the grave; I will redeem them from death,...." "no one shall snatch them out of My hand" (Luke 19:10, Heb. 2:14, John 16:33, Rev. 1:17, 18, Luke 10:19, Hosea 13:14, John 10:28).

"Thanks be to God,.... you were once slaves of sin,...." but God "has manifested through the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, who abolished death and brought life and immortality to light through the gospel."

"Now that you have been set free from sin.... the return that you get is... eternal life." "There is therefore now no condemnation for those who are in Christ Jesus. For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus has set you free from the law of sin of death." Praise the Lord! (Rom. 6:17,18, 2 Tim. 1:10, Rom. 6:22, Rom. 8:1,2). "O death, where is thy victory? O death, where is thy sting? The sting of death is sin, and the power of sin is the law. But thanks be to God, who gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ." Praise the Lord! (1 Cor. 15:55-57) "O Lord!... O Thou who liftest me up from the gates of death," "You delivered us from so deadly a peril," and gave us power over all the power of the enemy." "Now "the gates of hell shall not prevail against" us. Praise the Lord! (Ps. 9:13, 2 Cor. 1:10, Luke 10:19, Matt. 16:18).

"Grace be unto you, and peace... from Jesus Christ, who is the faithful witness, and the first begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth. Unto Him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in His own blood, and hath made us kings and priests unto God and His Father, to Him be glory and dominion forever and ever. Amen." Praise the Lord! (Rev. 1:4-6, K.J.V.).

## 12. Jesus Christ, the Holy Shepherd

"I am the Good Shepherd: the good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep." "I am the Good Shepherd, and know My sheep, and am known of Mine. As the Father knoweth Me, even so know I the Father: and I lay down My life for the sheep." "And ye My flock, the flock of My pasture, are men, and I am your God, saith the Lord God" (John 10:11,14,15, K.J.V., Ezek. 34:31, K.J.V.).

As our heavenly Father saw His earthly children wander around aimlessly without the shepherd, to become a prey to the wild beast Satan, He sighed,

"My sheep wandered through all the mountains, and upon every high hill: yea, My flock was scattered upon all the face of the earth and none did search, or seek after them, "...because there is no shepherd: and they became meat to all the beasts of the field, when they were scattered" (Ezek. 34:6,5, K.J.V.). "Therefore will I save My flock, and they shall no more be a prey: for "I will set up one shepherd over them, and he shall feed them, even My servant David: he shall feed them, and he shall be their shepherd. And I the Lord will be their God, and My servant David a prince among them: I the Lord have spoken it, And I will make with them a covenant of peace, and cause the evil beasts to cease out of the land: and they shall dwell safely in the wilderness, and sleep in the woods" (Ezek. 34:22-25, K.J.V.).

"All we like sheep have gone astray" (Isa. 53:6). The Lord God our Father was deeply touched with pity for us and sent us a holy shepherd David- Jesus Christ His Son in order that He might save us from the power of Satan the wild beast, and lead us safely to His kingdom. Therefore, today we are, under the protection of the power of Jesus the holy Shepherd, able to dwell safely in the wilderness" of earth, partaking freely of the fodder of eternal life.

Before He came to the earth He had declared, "I will feed My flock, and I will cause them to lie down, saith the Lord God. I will seek that which was lost, and bring again that which was driven away, and will bind up that which was broken, and will strengthen that which was sick. . . . As a shepherd seeketh out his flock in the day that he is among his sheep that are scattered: so will I seek out My sheep, and will deliver them out of all places where they have been scattered in the cloudy and dark day. And I will bring them out from the people, and gather them from the countries, and will bring them to their own land, and feed them upon the mountains of Israel by the rivers, and in all the inhabited places of the country. I will feed them in a good pasture, and upon the high mountains of Israel shall their fold be: there shall they lie in a good fold, and in a fat pasture shall they feed upon the mountains of Israel" (Ezek. 34:15,16, 12-14, K.J.V.).

Indeed, "when the fulness of the time was come" (Gal. 4:4), the Lord God Jesus, according as He had

declared in heaven, came down to Bethlehem to be the Shepherd of His earthly children. He came to deliver them from the power of Satan the wild beast "who had the power of death" (Heb. 2:14), and to bring them to heaven, their home.

He said, "The Son of man came to seek and to save the lost" (Luke 19:10). And "when He saw the crowds, He had compassion for them, because they were harassed and helpless, like sheep without a shepherd. . . . As He went ashore He saw a great throng, and He had compassion on them, because they were like sheep without a shepherd: and He began to teach them many things" (Matt. 9:36, Mark 6:34).

He said, "I am the Good Shepherd . . . I lay down My life for the sheep. . . . For this reason the Father loves Me, because I lay down My life, that I may take it again. No one takes it from Me, but I lay it down of My own accord" (John 10:14,15,17,18). "Then said Jesus unto them again, 'Verily, verily, I say unto you, I am the door of the sheep. . . . By Me if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and find pasture'" (John 10:7,9).

"I am the Good Shepherd. . . . The sheep hear His voice, and He calls His own sheep by name and leads them out. . . . You did not choose Me, but I chose you and appointed you" (John 10:11, 3,15:16).

The Almighty God who is "the Alpha and Omega, the first and the last, the beginning and the end" (Rev. 22:13) is our Good Shepherd, who lays down His



precious life for us of His own accord, and becomes the Door of the sheep Himself through which man may go in and out to find abundant pastures of eternal life. It is He who, before the foundation of the world, had seen and known us with the Father and chosen us to be His sheep; and when the time came He came and called and found each one of us today.

But toward Jewish leaders, Pharisees and scribes that He had not chosen He said, "Ye believe not because ye are not of My sheep... My sheep hear My voice, and I know them, and they follow Me. And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of My hand."

He who is of God hears the words of God; the reason why you do not hear them is that you are not of God" (John 10:26-28, K.J.V., John 8:47).

"Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh his own; for he is a liar, and the father of it" (John 8:44, K.J.V.).

Centuries before Jesus came, the prophet Isaiah had spoken, "O Zion, that bringest good tidings, get thee up into the high mountain; O Jerusalem, that bringest good tidings, lift up thy voice with strength; lift it up, be not afraid; say unto the cities of Judah, 'Behold your God! ... He shall feed His flock like a shepherd; He shall gather the lambs with His arm, and carry them

in His bosom, and gently lead those that are with young" (Isa. 40:9, 11, K.J.V.).

David praised Him, saying, "The Lord is my Shepherd; I shall not want" (Ps. 23:1).

The apostle Paul spoke of Him "our Lord Jesus, the Great Shepherd of the sheep" (Heb. 13:20).

Peter said, "Ye were as sheep going astray; but are now returned unto the Shepherd and Bishop of your souls" (1 Peter 2:25, K.J.V.).

The apostle John said, "And I looked, and, lo, a Lamb stood on the mount Sion, and with Him an hundred forty and four thousand. ... These are they which follow the Lamb whithersoever He goeth. These are redeemed from among men, being the first fruits unto God and to the Lamb. ... they shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more; neither shall the sun light on them, nor any heat, for the Lamb which is in the midst of the throne shall feed them, and shall lead them unto living fountains of waters, and God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes" (Rev. 14:1, 4, 7:16, 17, K.J.V.).

O what a glorious plan of salvation our God and our Lord Jesus have prepared for us! This is the fulfillment of the promise that He had declared in heaven that He would "bring them into their own land" (Ezek. 34:12-14, Rev. 7:16, 17).

However great the flock may be, the shepherd knows each one of them, and every one has its name. When the shepherd calls their names, they answer. As the shepherd in the world knows his flock, so does Jesus

know His flock scattered in the world. "I know My own and My own know Me, as the Father knows Me and I know the Father." "I have called you by name, you are mine." "I have graven you on the palms of My hands" (John 10:14,15, Isa. 43:1, Isa. 49:16).

Jesus knows us individually, and is touched with the feeling of our infirmities. He knows us all by name. He knows the very house in which we live, the name of each occupant. He at times gives directions to his servants to go to a certain street in a certain city to such a house, to find one of His sheep. Every soul is as fully known to Jesus as if he were the only one for whom He died. The distress of every one touches His heart. The cry for aid reaches His ear. Jesus knows who they are. He also knows who gladly hear His call, and are ready to come under His pastoral care.

When Nathanael asked Him, "How do you know me?" Jesus answered him, "Before Philip called you, when you were under the fig tree I" knew you and saw you" (John 1:48).

In the case of a Samaritan woman, Jesus said to her, "You are right in saying, 'I have no husband'; for you have had five husbands, and he whom you now have is not your husband; this you said truly. Then the woman said to Him, 'Sir, I perceive that you are a prophet'" (John 4:17,19).

Jesus the Holy Shepherd is familiar with the life of each one of His sheep individually, penetrates his heart, pities on all his trials, comforts, ties up wounds, strengthens, and guides him.

He knows and cares for each one as if there were not another on the face of the earth. "He calls His own sheep by name, and leads them out" (John 10:3). The shepherd does not drive his sheep. He depends not upon force or fear; but going before, he calls them. They know his voice, and obey the call. So does the Saviour-shepherd with His sheep. The Scripture says, "Thou didst lead Thy people like a flock by the hand of Moses and Aaron." Through the prophet, Jesus declares, "I have loved thee with an everlasting love; therefore with loving-kindness have I drawn thee." He compels none to follow Him. "I drew them." He says, "with cords of a man, with bands of love" (Ps. 77:20, Jer. 31:3, K.J.V., Hosea 11:4, K.J.V.).

It was not the fear of punishment, or the hope of everlasting reward that led the disciples of Christ to follow Him. They beheld the Saviour's matchless love revealed throughout His pilgrimage on earth, from the manger of Bethlehem to Calvary's cross, and the sight of Him attracted, softened and subdued their souls. Love awakens in the heart of the beholders. They hear His voice, and they follow Him. As the shepherd goes before his sheep, himself first encountering the perils of the way, so does Jesus with His people. When He puts forth His own sheep, He goes before them. The way to heaven is sanctified by the Saviour's footprints. The path may be steep and rugged, but Jesus has travelled that way; His feet have pressed down the cruel thorns, to make the pathway easier for us. Every

burden that we are called to bear He Himself has borne. Though now He has ascended to the presence of God, and shares the throne of the universe, Jesus has lost none of His compassionate nature. Today the same tender, sympathizing heart is open to all the woes of humanity.

Today the hand that was pierced is reached forth to bless more abundantly His people that are in the world. "And they shall never perish, neither shall man pluck them out of My hand." The soul that has given himself to Christ is more precious in His sight than the whole world. The Saviour would have passed through the agony of Calvary that one might be saved in His kingdom. He will never abandon one for whom He has died. Unless His followers choose to leave Him, He will hold them fast.

Through all our trials we have a never-failing Helper. He does not leave us alone to struggle with temptation, to battle with evil, and be finally crushed with burdens and sorrow. Though He is now hidden from mortal sight, the ear of faith can hear His voice saying, "Fear not: I am with you. I am He that liveth, and was dead; and, I am alive forevermore to care for you with love" (Rev. 1:18, K.J.V.). "I have endured your sorrows, experienced your struggles, encountered your temptations. I know your tears: I also have wept. The griefs that lie too deep to be breathed into any human ear. I know. Think not that you are desolate and forsaken. Though your pain touch no responsive

chord in any heart on earth, look unto Me, and live. "The mountains shall depart, and the hills be removed; but My kindness shall not depart from thee, neither shall the covenant of My peace be removed, saith the Lord that hath mercy on thee" (Isa. 54:10, K.J.V.). Amen! Praise the Lord! Glory and praise and thanksgiving forever and ever to our Saviour the Good and Holy Shepherd who knows and cares for each one of us, and who experienced and helps us with our infirmities, holding us fast and leading us to the river of life in heaven! Amen!

### 13. Jesus Christ, the God Who Answers by Fire

"You call on the name of your god and I will call on the name of the Lord: and the God who answers by fire. He is God. And all the people answered. It is well spoken" (1 Kings 18:24).

This is the event taken place during the darkest days of Israel, when the light of the knowledge of God was about to be lost sight of in the world, and a nameless young man suddenly appeared as a bright star in the midst of the thick darkness to fight with the power of the darkness, standing all alone on the side of the Lord Jehovah, who was "very jealous for the Lord God of hosts" (1 Kings 19:10), and was called Elijah the Tishbite.

This was the proposition he presented with great dignity to all God's fallen people, and Ahab their blind leader, and all antichrists—Baal's prophets, to choose to serve the god who would answer by fire from heaven. This proposition was unanimously accepted by the people. Now this was an inevitable confrontation between light and darkness, that should tell which side was of true God.

Eventually, the Lord living God sent fire; answer to the prayer of His faithful servant crying to Him standing all alone and so defeated the enemies while glorying His Name and His servant. This was the most splendid event in the history of Israel.

Today when the antichrists have taken almost complete possession of the whole world, as in the times of Elijah, "Who is the true God the Lord of hosts? Let us find Him and serve Him alone" is the word and desire of all the race today.

The Lord true God who is the Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last, who is the same yesterday and today and forever (Rev. 22:13, Heb. 13:8), will also answer today by fire to His servants who render untainted loyalty to Him as he did to Elijah. This God is Jesus Christ the Lord.

The prophet John the Baptist testifies to that. "I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance, but He that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: He shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire: whose fan is in His hand, and He will thoroughly purge His floor, and gather His wheat into the garner: but He will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire." "I myself did not know Him: but He who sent me to baptize with water said to me, 'He on whom you see the Spirit descend and remain, this is He who baptizes with the Holy Spirit.' And I have seen and have borne witness that this is the Son of God" (Matt. 3:11,12, K.J.V., John 1:33,34).

Indeed, in accordance with the word of the prophet, after He finished His public ministry for His children, and before His ascension "while staying with" His disciples "He charged them not to depart from



Jerusalem, but to wait for the promise of the Father, which He said, "You heard from Me, for John baptized with water, but before many days you shall be baptized with the Holy Spirit." "Behold, I send the promise of My Father upon you; but stay in the city, until you are clothed with power from on high."

"When the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth,.... He shall testify of Me" (Acts 1:4,5, Luke 24:49, John 15:26).

And Jesus who had departed with the promise sent the "fire" (Acts 2:1-4) of the Holy Spirit to the crowds that were waiting for its fulfillment with confidence on the day of Pentecost, proving that He was the true God who answers by fire. (1 Kings 18:4)

This Jesus was also the God that answered by fire to his beloved, faithful servant Elijah on Mount Carmel in ancient times. "Jesus Christ" is "the same yesterday and today, and for ever" (Heb. 13:8). Moreover when the faithful servants of God, "Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego" were thrown into the burning fiery furnace for their loyalty to the living God, there appeared "the fourth man" among the three, whose form was like "the Son of God." It was Jesus Christ. Our Lord who controls heat and cold of His own accord protected His faithful servants perfectly from fire without a smell of scorch, even from their hair, and glorified His servants and His Name—the name of God as he did with Elijah. (Dan. 3:23-27)

And it was Jesus, "the angel of the Lord," who appeared to His faithful servant Gideon and "reached

out the tip of the staff that was in His hand and touched" the offering Gideon had placed on the rock—"the meat and the unleavened cakes: there sprang up fire from the rock and consumed the flesh and the unleavened cakes" (Judg. 6:21). It was like the offering and the altar of Elijah consumed by fire. It is written a few verses before this verse that "the angel of the Lord" was not an angel of heaven, a created being. "And the Lord looked upon him and said, 'Go in this thy might, and thou shalt save Israel from the hand of the Midianites: have I not sent thee?' And he said unto Him, 'Oh my Lord, wherewith shall I save Israel?' ... And the Lord said unto him, 'Surely I will be with thee, and thou shalt smite the Midianites as one man'" (Judg. 6:14-16, K.J.V.).

"The angel of the Lord" means the representative of God sent to the world. Therefore it is evident that it was not an angel but God the Son Jesus Christ who dwelt with the Father.

Once He also appeared to Samson's parents as "the angel of the Lord" saying, "My name... is Wonderful" (Judg. 13:18). We can easily perceive from the identification of His name that He was "the mighty God" whom the prophet Isaiah testified as having the name "Wonderful" and who also came to save the world "as a child." Jesus Christ. (Isa. 9:6)

And also the angel of the Lord who appeared to His beloved son Jacob a few thousand years ago as he was fervently praying by the brook Jabbok, and said to him "What is thy name?... Thy name shall be called..."

Israel" (Gen. 32:27,28, K.J.V.), was not an angel, a creature, but God the Son Jesus Christ. The Angel said to him, "You have striven with God and with men, and have prevailed." And Jacob said, "I have seen God face to face, and yet my life is preserved" (Gen. 32:28,30). We can see that "the angel of the Lord who" appeared that night was Jesus the Second Person of the Godhead. It was also He who delivered the two millions of His children (600 thousand, counting adults only) from bondage under Pharaoh in Egypt to give them true liberty, and led and protected them for 40 years in the wilderness by a pillar of fire and a pillar of cloud. "Moreover, brethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant, how that all our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea; and were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea; and did all eat the same spiritual meats; and did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that rock was Christ" (1 Cor. 10:1-4, K.J.V.).

And once on the road to Damascus "at midday" He appeared to Saul who had persecuted His faithful servants in a light that was "above the brightness of the sun" (Acts 26:13). And to John His faithful apostle shut in Patmos He appeared and declared to him, "I am Alpha and Omega... the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty" (Rev. 1:8, K.J.V.).

He is also the God who appears to His faithful children today who seek Him diligently. He says, "I love those who love Me, and those who seek Me diligently find Me." "Ye shall seek Me, and find Me, when ye shall search for Me with all your heart" (Pro. 8:17, Jer. 29:13, K.J.V.).

Our real Father in heaven so loved the world that He sent His only Son not only once as He sent Him in human form, but all throughout the ages even before Jesus partook of the human nature He sent Him to every one of His children.

Our Father again speaks to us about His Son. "Behold, I will send My Messenger... The Lord whom ye seek shall suddenly come to His temple, even the Messenger of the covenant, whom ye delight in... But who may abide the day of His coming? And who shall stand when He appeareth? For He is like a refiner's fire, and like fullers' soap. And He shall sit as a refiner and purifier of silver: and He shall purify the sons of Levi, and purge them as gold and silver, that they may offer unto the Lord an offering in righteousness" (Mal. 3:1-3, K.J.V.).

The prophet Isaiah also testifies of Him, "The Lord shall have washed away the filth of the daughters of Zion, and shall have purged the blood of Jerusalem from the midst thereof by the spirit of judgement, and by the spirit of burning" (Isa. 4:4, K.J.V.). "The sinners in Zion are afraid; trembling has seized the godless: 'Who among us can dwell with the devouring fire? Who among us can dwell with everlasting burning?'" (Isa. 33:14).

The poet the prophet also said of Jesus, "Our God shall come, and shall not keep silence: a fire shall devour before Him, and it shall be very tempestuous round about Him" (Ps. 50:3, K.J.V.).

John the Baptist says again, "I indeed baptize you with water; but One mightier than I cometh... He shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost and with fire: whose fan is in His hand, and He will thoroughly purge His floor, and will gather the wheat into His garner; but the chaff He will burn with fire unquenchable" (Luke 3:16, 17, K.J.V.).

Paul and the Spirit testify, "In many and various ways God spoke of old to our fathers by the prophets; but in these last days He has spoken to us by a Son, whom He appointed the heir of all things, through whom also He created the world. He reflects the glory of God and bears the very stamp of His nature, upholding the universe by His (Jesus') word of power. When He had made purification for sins, He sat down at the right hand of the Majesty on high... All God's angels worship Him... who makes His angels winds, and His servants flames of fire. Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever, the righteous sceptre is the sceptre of Thy kingdom... Thou, Lord, didst found the earth in the beginning, and the heavens are the work of Thy hands: they will perish, but Thou remainest; they will all grow old like a garment. Like a mantle thou wilt roll them up, and they will be changed. But Thou art the same, and Thy years will never end" (Heb. 1:1-12).

Praise the Lord! Glory and praise and thanksgiving to our Lord Jesus the true God who answers by fire of the Holy Spirit—the consuming fire of purification! Amen. Praise the Lord!

#### 14. Jesus Christ, a Stone Cut Out by No Human Hand

"You saw, O king, and beheld a great image. This image, mighty and exceeding brightness, stood before you, and its appearance was frightening. The head of this image was of fine gold, its breast and arms of silver, its belly and thighs of bronze, its legs of iron, its feet partly of iron and partly of clay" (Dan. 2:31-33).

"As you looked, a stone was cut out by no human hand, and it smote the image on its feet of iron and clay, and broke them in pieces... and it became like the chaff of the summer threshing floors; and the wind carried them away, so that not a trace of them could be found. But the stone that struck the image became a great mountain and filled the whole earth" (Dan. 2:34,35).

This is the prophet Daniel's inspired explanation of the vision that God of heaven revealed in a dream concerning the things to come until the end of the world, and of which secret God alone had kept in Himself to king Nebuchadnezzar 2500 years ago who wielded his power over the world at that time.

"This is the dream; and we will tell the interpretation thereof before the king" (Dan. 2:36, K.J.V.).

"You, O king, the king of kings, to whom the God of heaven has given the kingdom, the power, the might, and the glory... You are the head of gold (Babylonia)". (Dan. 2:37,38)

"After you (Babylonia) shall arise another kingdom inferior to you (silver), and yet a third kingdom of bronze, which shall rule over all the earth. And there shall be a fourth kingdom, strong as iron, because iron breaks to pieces and shatters all things; and like iron which crushes, it shall break and crush all these. And as you saw the feet and toes partly of potter's clay and partly of iron, it shall be a divided kingdom... You saw the iron mixed with miry clay, ... but they will not hold together, just as iron does not mix with clay" (Dan. 2:39-43).

And at the end, "a stone cut out by no human hand smote the image and broke it in pieces, and it became like the chaff of the summer threshing floors; and the wind carried them away, so that not a trace of them could be found. But the stone that struck the image became a great mountain and filled the whole earth" (Dan. 2:34,35). And the stone is explained as follows.

"In the days of those kings the God of heaven will set up a kingdom which shall never be destroyed, nor shall its sovereignty be left to another people. It shall break in pieces all these kingdoms and bring them to an end, and it shall stand for ever" (Dan. 2:44).

Here the prophet Daniel finished his interpretation, and said to the king, "A great God has made known to the king what shall be hereafter. The dream is certain, and its interpretation sure" (Dan. 2:5) "Then king Nebuchadnezzar fell upon his face, and did homage to Daniel, ... and said, 'Truly your God is God



of gods and Lord of kings" (Dan. 2:45-57), "and commanded that an offering and incense be offered up to Him" (Dan. 2:46).

Now, today 2500 years since then, we can see whether the vision has been true and positive according as God had shown to the king of Babylon. Let us now trace the history of the kingdoms.

\* Gold—Babylonia had been known in ancient times as a kingdom matchless in her riches of gold, and imperishable with her strong castle walls, but in a single night her history was abruptly ended by the allied forces of Medes and Persians. "This matter is by the decree of the watchers, ... by the word of the holy ones" (Dan. 4:17). And the golden empire ceased. (605-539 B.C.)

\* Silver—the second Empire, as the image had two arms of silver, divided into two—Medes and Persians. She was a silver empire so rich in silver as to make silver coins for the first time in history. But this wealthy empire, likewise, could not pass over God's "determined allotted period" (Acts 17:26) and was overthrown by the force of Alexander. (539-331 B.C.)

\* Bronze—the third Empire, as symbolized by one belly, was an unified kingdom—Greece; and according to God's foretold prophecy, the kingdom was a bronze empire as king Alexander conquered the world with bronze helmet, bronze shield and bronze spear. This splendid empire, similarly, could not pass over the time

allotted to her by "the Most High who ruleth in the kingdom of men" (Dan. 4:17), and perished forever when overcome by Rome. (331-168 B.C.)

\* Iron, the fourth Empire—According to the predicted word of God, Rome was the iron empire, which, as symbolized by two iron legs, divided into two—east and west. Historians state of this Empire as follows. "Although the Roman armies advanced to the Euphrates River, the Danube River, the Rhine River, and to the ocean, they never suffered a defeat in a battle; they overthrew, as if breaking in pieces with iron hammer, the kings and empires symbolized by gold, silver, and bronze. She became an invincible kingdom of the world breaking in pieces all other nations. But "the Most High who gives it to whom He will" (Dan. 4:17) removed her crown to give to another nation, Heruli, and she divided and divided. (168 B.C.-476 A.D.)

\* The fifth, symbolized by partly of iron and partly of clay of ten toes of the image was the divided kingdoms of east and west Rome, that would never be unified until the end of the world.

- |                |             |
|----------------|-------------|
| ① Alemanni     | Germany     |
| ② Franks       | France      |
| ③ Anglo-Saxons | Britain     |
| ④ Burgundians  | Switzerland |
| ⑤ Visigoths    | Spain       |
| ⑥ Suevi        | Portugal    |

- |              |        |
|--------------|--------|
| ⑦ Vandals    | Africa |
| ⑧ Lombards   | Italy  |
| ⑨ Heruli     | Italy  |
| ⑩ Ostrogoths | Italy  |

These Kingdoms have been divided according to God's time-table. A number of ambitious men have striven to unite these kingdoms like Babylonia but in vain.

One preminent figure among them is Napoleon who, denying impossibility in his lifetime, had asserted assuredly that he would put the whole world in the hollow of his hand within five years, whose work proved futile at the end. Having killed innumerable lives of other nations and of France his own, he was able to possess nothing more than France his own that the Most High had given him, and ended his life talking in delirium in a misty desert island. It was because a man Napoleon could not unite that which God of heaven had divided.

Another is Hitler of Germany, who, saying, "It is useless to pray; make one more bomb while praying," strove to unify all nations, slaughtering millions of lives. But he could not go over the line God had appointed him saying, "Thus far shall you come, and no farther, and here shall your proud waves be stayed" (Job 38:11), and passed away in shame.

And others like Stalin and Charles the Great also tried and did their best to fulfill their lust of conquest sacrificing many lives, but merely to obey the "decree"

of "the Most High" (Dan. 4:17) to whom "all the inhabitants of the earth are accounted as nothing," who "does according to His will in the host of heaven and among the inhabitants of the earth: and none can stay His hand or say to Him, 'what dost Thou?'" (Dan. 4:35).

Even if any man of ambition or any powerful nation would ever rise again to attempt to get unification, he will never be able to go beyond his assigned place in God's great plan. The plan of God would never be changed "in whose hand is his breath and whose are all his ways" (Dan. 5:23). But the division will perpetuate until the end of the world.

\* At last in the days of those kings "a stone cut out by no human hand" will strike all the divided nations of this earth and make it like chaff on a threshing floor in the summer, and the wind will sweep them away without leaving a trace, and the stone will become a huge mountain and fill the whole earth (Dan. 2:34,35). Then which kingdom shall the stone be? And who shall establish it?

As we learned already, this is the eternal kingdom that the Most High God shall establish "in the days of those kings, ... which shall never be destroyed, nor its sovereignty be left to another people," but that "shall break in pieces all these kingdoms and bring them to an end," and that "shall stand forever" (Dan. 2:44).

This kingdom shall be established by Jesus Christ

who once came to earth and saved His children from the power of Satan the devil with infinite sacrifice and with His mighty power, and left with a promise that He would surely come again (John 14:1-3); and the stone that was cut out by no human hand is Jesus Christ as testified in the Bible.

God said, "Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner stone, elect, precious; and he that believeth on Him shall not be confounded." Jesus, He is the "living stone, rejected by men but in God's sight chosen and precious," a "stone cut out by no human hand" (1 Peter 2:6,4, K.J.V., Dan. 2:34).

Jesus, the Living Stone, with His mighty Creator's hand, sweeps away this earth full of misery and disease and death, and establishes a new kingdom of peace that is holy and sinless without a trace of sickness, war, and sound of sword and spear, where "death shall be no more, neither shall... be mourning nor crying nor pain any more" (Rev. 21:4).

In this way the history of long-lasting darkness, of the prison without bars, of the dreadful valley of death, of this earth-cemetery, of this sinful world ends forever, and begins the new heaven and new earth, the kingdom of Christ. His kingdom of peace "which shall never be destroyed, nor shall its sovereignty be left to another," which "the saints of the Most High shall take... and possess for ever, even for ever and ever" (Dan. 2:44, 7:18, K.J.V.).

O my dear brethren and sisters! Shall we not enter the kingdom of peace of our Lord Jesus Christ, His new world, and live there forever? Earnestly and still earnestly I pray that I shall see there everyone's face whom I met here on this earth and live there together in everlasting happiness.

Praise the Lord! Glory and praise to our Lord Jesus Christ, Welcome the Stone cut out by no human hand that shall soon strike the earth! Praise the Lord!

\* \* \* \* \*

"Why do the nations conspire, and the peoples plot in vain? The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together against the Lord and His anointed, saying, Let us burst their bonds asunder, and cast their cords from us? He who sits in the heavens laughs: the Lord has them in derision" (Ps. 2:1-4).

## 15. Jesus Christ, the Precious Spiritual Rock

"Behold, I lay in Sion a stumblingstone and rock of offence: and whosoever believeth on Him shall not be ashamed" (Rom. 9:33, K.J.V.). For those who believe in this rock "He will be a sanctuary; but for both houses of Israel He will be a stone that causes men to stumble and a rock that makes them fall. And for the people of Jerusalem He will be a trap and a snare. And many among them shall stumble, and fall, and be broken, and be snared, and be taken" (Isa. 8:14, 15, K.J.V.).

"Ascribe ye greatness unto our God. He is the Rock," "a Living Stone, disallowed indeed of men, but chosen of God, and precious;" it is Jesus Christ, the Rock. (Deut. 32:3, 4, K.J.V., 1 Peter 2:4, K.J.V.)

"Moreover, brethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant, how that all our fathers, "for 40 years in the wilderness, "were under the cloud, "and were all baptized unto Moses... in the sea; and did all eat the same spiritual meat,"—"manna from heaven; "and did all drink the same spiritual drink,"—"water from a rock, "for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that Rock was Christ" (1 Cor. 10:1-4, K.J.V.).

"It is contained in the Scripture, 'Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner stone, the spiritual Rock elect, precious: and he that believeth on Him shall not be

confounded.' Unto you therefore which believe, He is precious. " "But to those who do not believe, a stone that causes men to stumble and a rock that makes them fall. They stumble because they disobey the message which is also what they were destined for" (1 Peter 2:6-8, K.J.V., N.I.V.).

In this hour we will learn why God called Jesus Christ "The Precious Spiritual Rock."

### \* Christ, the Spiritual Rock that Gives Living Water

Our heavenly Father, through His beloved Son, has been providing the needs of all His earthly children.

In ancient times when He was leading the Israelites "through the great and terrible wilderness... and thirty ground where there was no water, " "He made streams come out of the rock, and caused waters to flow down like rivers" (Deut. 8:15, Ps. 78:16). He said to Moses, "Take the rod, and assemble the congregation, you and Aaron your brother, and tell the rock before their eyes to yield its water; so you shall bring water out of the rock for them; so you shall give drink to the congregation and their cattle" (Num. 20:7, 8).

Jesus Christ "the Spiritual Rock" who satisfied the six hundred thousand Israelites with living water flowing like rivers in the wilderness is now exclaiming to us, "If any man thirst, let him come and drink. He that believeth on Me... out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water. " "Whosoever drinketh of the water



that I shall give him shall never thirst; but the water that I shall give him shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life" (John 7:37,38, K.J.V., 4:14, K.J.V.).

Glory and praise to Jesus Christ the Spiritual Rock that follows us (1 Cor. 10:4), providing our body and soul with rivers of living water! Praise the Lord!

**\* Christ, the Spiritual Rock that Gives Honey**

God led the Israelites also to this Spiritual Rock and made them suck honey there. "The Lord" for 40 years "made them to suck honey out of the rock" (Deut. 32:13, K.J.V.). Out of this Spiritual Rock (Christ) came out honey both for body and for soul. Let us now listen to the confessions of our fathers that had tasted and enjoyed it while they were alive.

David said, "How sweet are Thy words unto my taste! Yea, sweeter than honey to my mouth!" (Ps. 119:103, K.J.V.). He said to his friends, "More to be desired are the words that have been from the beginning than gold, yea, than much fine gold: sweeter also than honey and the honeycomb" (Ps. 19:10, K.J.V., John 1:1,2). Peter the disciple exclaimed, holding on to Jesus, the Spiritual Rock, "Lord, to whom shall we go? Thou hast the words of eternal life" (John 6:68, K.J.V.). He became the blessed one sucking honey from Him forever. God is exclaiming toward the world today, "(Come), and with honey from the rock I (will) satisfy you" (Ps. 81:16).

**\* Christ, the Spiritual Rock that Gives Oil**

The Lord "made" them "suck... oil out of the flinty rock" (Deut. 32:13). The Spiritual Rock filled Job with overflowing supply of oil as it had done to the Israelites in the wilderness, and the widow in Zarephath (1 Kings 17:15,16) and the wife of Elisha's disciple (2 Kings 4:6,7). And Job said, "The Rock poured out for me streams of oil," and thanked Him. (Job 29:6)

The apostle John who was filled with the oil of the Spiritual Rock also said, "(Be) anointed by the Holy One" (1 John 2:20). "He that believeth" in the Rock, "as the Scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of" "oil" (Matt. 25:3). "(But this spake He of the Spirit, which they that believe on Him should receive)" (John 7:37-39, K.J.V.). This "Spirit" is that oil which is essential for the life of the soul, which alone can so strengthen the sparks of the soul that it should shine more brightly, which is the sacred oil of heaven. This oil is supplied boundlessly like the rivers of water only by Christ alone, "the Spiritual Rock."

To those who are now filled with the holy oil by the Spiritual Rock are given the privilege of participating in the glorious feast of Jesus the Lamb in heaven. Therefore now the wise and the prudent come to the Spiritual Rock and diligently fill themselves with the oil, but, on the other hand, the foolish do not come to receive it but idle their time away. Therefore the foolish will end up being driven out from the glorious

marriage feast in heaven, mourning and crying in regret outside. (Matt. 25:1-12)

Praise the Lord! Glory and blessing will be theirs who now come to the Spiritual Rock and fill themselves with boundless supply of the rivers of oil.

**\* Christ, the Spiritual Rock that Gives Milk**

"Like new born babes, long for the pure spiritual milk." "He will feed His flock like a shepherd. He will gather the lambs in His arms. He will carry them in His bosom, and gently lead those that are with young" (1 Peter 2:2, Isa. 40:11).

Today, Christ, the Spiritual Rock is calling us with love, "Come into My garden, My sister, My spouse" ... Drink "My milk, ... drink, yea, drink abundantly, O beloved." "I will fulfill the oath I swore to your forefathers, to give them a land flowing with milk and honey" (Song. 5:1, K.J.V., Jer. 11:5, N.I.V.).

Praise the Lord! Praise and thanksgiving to His infinite love who makes us "suck... oil out of the flinty rock, curds from the herd, and milk from the flock" (Deut. 32:13, 14), and makes us plump in body and soul! Praise the Lord!

**\* Christ, the Spiritual Rock that Gives Wine**

The Lord "made... out of the flinty rock... the blood of the grape" (Deut. 32:13,14).

It was the incident taken place when "the Spiritual

Rock" came to earth in human form (1 Cor. 10:4).

Jesus also was invited to the marriage, with His disciples. When the wine gave out... Jesus said to them, "Fill the jars with water". And they filled them up to the brim. He said to them, "Now draw some out, and take it to the steward of the feast... When the steward of the feast tasted the water now become wine, "he did not know where it came from" (John 2:2, 3, 7-9). The wine here was not fermented wine, but "the good wine" (John 2:10) fresh and pure and free of alcohol, that is, "the pure blood of the grape" (Deut. 32:14) that caused no harm but only good effect to those who drank it.

Christ, "the Spiritual Rock" seeks to fill us with living wine of truth that gives eternal life, rather than that which we drink with our lips temporarily. Yet among the wines of truth there are good wine and bad wine; good wine is "new wine" (Luke 5:37), and bad wine is "old wine" (Luke 5:39). "Old wine" is full of alcohol due to its aging and fermentation, and it makes those who drink it or give it away to others get drunk and fall asleep unconsciously. But "new wine" is a fresh grape juice that is good, fresh, pure and not fermented. And it gives freshness and vitality to the souls that drink it or impart it to others, and revives and arouses not only them but also those souls that have fallen asleep by old wine. Neither ministers nor angels can supply this wine; it is supplied only by Christ—"the Spiritual Rock"—whom God gave to the

world because "He loved the world so much." But because the world detests new wine and enjoys old wine that makes them get drunk, the Spiritual Rock sighs. Jesus says, "None after drinking old wine desire new; for they say, 'The old is good'" (Luke 5:39).

Praise the Lord! Glory to Christ, "the Spiritual Rock who follows" us, satisfying our souls with new wine like exhaustless rivers!

**\* Christ, the Spiritual Rock that Gives Bread**

"Jesus said to them, 'I am the Bread of life; he who comes to Me shall never hunger'" (John 6:35).

"As it is written, 'He gave them bread from heaven to eat.' ... The bread of God is that which comes down from heaven, and give life to the world" (John 6:31, 33). "I am the living bread which came down from heaven: if any one eats of this bread, he will live forever" (John 6:51).

Christ, the Spiritual Rock satisfies us with the bread both for body and for soul. Now He gives us a reassuring guarantee, "Therefore I tell you, do not be anxious about your life, what you shall eat or what you shall drink, nor about your body, what you shall put on." "but seek first His kingdom and His righteousness, and all these things" He shall supply you (Matt. 6:25,33). He abundantly satisfied all who came to Him both physically and spiritually no matter how numerous they were; whether four thousand (Matt. 15:38) or five thousand (Matt. 14:21) or six hun-

dred thousand (Ex. 12:37). Oh, if all professed children of God today had known and believed in the Spiritual Rock, Christ that followed them (1 Cor. 10:4) and loved them so much, they would have not become "adulteresses" (Churches of today), "harlots of the earth" who "serve two masters" (James 4:4, Rev. 17:5, Matt. 6:24). Indeed it suddenly grieves us to realize that the sigh of the omniscient Spiritual Rock has been a truth. He did not say, "When the Son of man comes, will He find believers (Christians) on earth?" but He said, "When the Son of man comes, will He find faith on earth?" (Luke 18:8).

Praise the Lord! Blessed are those who soundly know and believe and follow this "Spiritual Rock."

**\* Christ, the Spiritual Rock that Gives the Light of Life**

"The light has come into the world.... Because their deeds" are "evil,"... they "hate the light, and do not come to the light, lest" their "deeds should be exposed" (John 3:19,20).

"Again Jesus spoke to them, saying, 'I am the light of the world: he who follows Me will not walk in darkness, but will have the light of life'" (John 8:12).

"The people that walked in darkness have seen a great light: they that dwell in the land of the shadow of death, upon them hath the light shined." "which thou hast prepared in the presence of all peoples, all light for revelation to the Gentiles, and for glory to

thy people Israel" (Isa. 9:2, K.J.V., Luke 2:31,32).

"The rising sun will come to us from heaven to shine on those living in darkness and the shadow of death, to guide our feet into the path of peace" (Luke 1:78,79, N.I.V.).

Praise the Lord! Everlasting light and blessing will be given to the children of God who abide in Christ. "the Spiritual Rock" from whom flows out the light of life brighter than the sun.

**\* Christ, the Spiritual Rock that is Capable of Saving Us**

"O Lord, my Rock and my Redeemer!" (Ps. 19:14).

"He drew me up from the desolate pit" of death, "out of the miry bog" of destruction, "and set my feet upon a rock, making my steps secure" (Ps. 40:2).

"For God alone my soul waits in silence; from Him comes my salvation. He only is my Rock and my Salvation" (Ps. 62:1,2).

The Spiritual Rock says, "Because he cleaves to Me in love, I will deliver him, I will protect him, because he knows My name. When he calls to Me, I will answer him; I will be with him in trouble, I will rescue him and honour him." Any one "who comes to Me I will not cast out." "I give them eternal life, and they shall never perish, and no one shall snatch them out of My hand" (Ps. 91:14,15, John 6:37, 10:28).

Praise the Lord! Glory to Christ. "the Spiritual Rock" forever who is strong to save us, who follows us! Praise the Lord!

**\* Christ, the Spiritual Rock that Listens to Our Prayers**

"Art Thou not from everlasting, O Lord my God, my Holy One?... And Thou, O Rock!" (Hab. 1:12).  
 "Thou art my Rock... for Thy name's sake lead me and guide me." "To Thee O Lord, I call; my Rock, be not deaf to me, lest, if Thou be silent to me, I become like those who go down to the pit" (Ps. 31:3, 28:1).

"Let the words of my mouth and the meditation of my heart be acceptable in Thy sight, O Lord, my Rock and my Redeemer" (Ps. 19:14).

The spiritual Rock answers, "Call to Me and I will answer you." "Hitherto you have asked nothing in My name; ask, and you will receive, that your joy may be full." "Whatever you ask in My name, I will do it..."  
 If you ask anything in My name, I will do it" (Jer. 33:3, John 16:24, 14:13, 14).

Praise the Lord! Glory and praise to Christ. "the Spiritual Rock that follows" us, that listens to every one's prayer and satisfies him with abundant gifts of heaven and earth! Praise the Lord!

**\* Christ, the Spiritual Rock that Strikes All the Wicked and the Righteous Individually**

God says. "Behold, I am laying in Zion a Stone that will make men stumble, a Rock that will make them fall." "the Rock which follows them." "a Rock of



temptation. . . . Everyone who falls on that stone will be broken to pieces; but when it falls on any one it will crush him" (Rom. 9:33, 1 Cor. 10:4, Luke 20:18).

"Every one who falls on that stone will be broken to pieces" means that anyone who returns in repentance to Christ the Spiritual Rock, into His bosom, will be cleansed of arrogance, greed, selfishness, and all filthy sins in heart and become humble, meek, holy, and receive salvation. "When it falls on any one it will crush him" means at the Second Advent of Jesus He will strike the proud, arrogant sinners and destroy them like "chaff of summer threshing floors" (Dan. 2:35) who persistently refused to come forward to Christ, the everlasting Spiritual Rock who came down to save all the people, and repent. "To you therefore who believe, He is precious, but for those who do not believe, . . . a Stone that will make them stumble, a Rock that will make them fall. . . . a trap and a snare. . . . And many shall stumble thereon; they shall fall and be broken; they shall be snared and taken" (1 Peter 2:7, 8, Isa. 8:14, 15).

Glorify and majesty to Christ, "the Spiritual Rock that follows" every one personally wicked or righteous! Praise the Lord!

**\* Christ, the Spiritual Rock that Strikes All Idols in the Hearts of Men**

"As you looked, a stone was cut out by no human hand, and it smote the image on its feet of iron and clay, and broke in pieces; then the iron, the clay, the

bronze, the silver, and the gold, all together were broken in pieces, and became like the chaff of the summer threshing floors; and the wind carried them away, so that not a trace of them could be found. But the stone that struck the image became a great mountain and filled the whole earth" (Dan. 2:34, 35).

"The Stone cut out by no human hand" is, as we learned, Christ "the Spiritual Rock" (1 Peter 2:4), which strikes two sorts of images. The first are the images that fill the hearts of men—the image of worldly desires that have captured their hearts and tormented them, greed for "gold, silver, bronze, iron and clay," that is, greed for money and land, and the image of mammonism that have captured the hearts of men dragging them recklessly. Others are the image of desire for fame—an ambition to become "the golden head" and "the silver breast" in the world, and the image of selfishness so dreadful and cruel that tramples others down solely for his own interests. These are so dreadful images that have taken possession of the hearts of men reigning and oppressing them relentlessly. These are so dreadful images of tremendous power and influence that cannot be driven out nor destroyed by any great man in the world, by all the combined forces of the world, or even by the entire angels in heaven. Only when they are struck by "the Stone cut out by no human hand"—Christ "the Spiritual Rock," they are broken in pieces "like chaff of the threshing floor in the summer" without leaving a trace. Only then, that person begins to enjoy true liberty and peace and

everlasting freedom.

O what a great number of souls are suffering pain and misery because of the images that reign over their hearts!

The Scripture says, "But understand this, that in the last days there will come times of stress" because of the images in the hearts of men; for men will have the image of self-love, the image of love of money, the image of pride, the image of arrogance, the image of abusiveness, the image of disobedience to their parents, the image of ingratitude, the image of profanity, the image of inhumanity, the image of implacability, the image of slander, the image of profligacy, the image of fierceness, the image of abhorance of good, the image of treachery that makes them despise and betray the grace of God and of their neighbors, the image of recklessness that prevents them from waiting for God's providence, the image of self-exaltation, the image that makes them love pleasure more than God, and the image of holding godly form but denying the power of godliness (2 Tim 3:1-5). Not only these but also the image that makes them love fornication, the image that makes them love impurity, the image that makes them love licentiousness, the image that makes them devote to idolatry, the image that makes them love sorcery, the image that causes enmity, the image that makes them love strife, the image that makes them jealous, the image of anger, the image of selfishness, the image of dissension, the image of heresy, the image of envy, the image of drunkenness and the image of carousing. (Gal. 5:19-21)

The Bible has already prophesied and is also warning us today that these colorful and numerous images would, in the last days, drive all the children of God into unspeakable anguish and perplexity and misery. (2 Tim. 3:1)

The greatest distress and perplexity are taking the hearts of men today as never before since the creation of the world, and having lost their mind, all the inhabitants of the earth are wandering in terrible anguish whether they are in the religious world or in the political world, whether kings or vassals, whether masters or slaves. But our tender heavenly Father has provided for this time of distress "the precious Spiritual Rock, Christ the Living Stone" that would break in pieces and scatter away these images of Satan that afflict His children today, to give them liberty and peace and joy.

Now the children of God on earth need not be tormented any more by the numerous images that Satan has set up in their hearts. If any one invites this "Spiritual Rock" into his heart, the images will "be swept away by the wind of the Holy Spirit like chaff on a threshing floor in the summer," and "the Stone that struck the images," that is, the Spiritual Rock will become "a great mountain and fill the whole earth" of his heart (Dan. 2:35). And from then on "the Spiritual Rock" in him becomes the Precious Rock that provides him, all through the year, rivers of living water, milk, honey, oil, wine, and the bread of life

abundantly. And the great and bright light that comes out from the Rock will shine in his heart's world as brightly as seven suns. And the light that shines out from him to all the world will be indeed wonderful and mysterious.

But to those who despise God's infinite love and grace and persistently refuse to accept into their hearts "the Spiritual Rock," Christ, "the Stone cut out by no human hand" that has been sent from heaven, and still cherish the numerous images in their hearts, God says, "The word of the Lord came to me: 'Son of man, these men have taken their idols into their hearts, and set the stumbling block of their iniquity before their faces; should I let Myself be inquired of at all by them? Therefore speak to them, and say to them. Thus says the Lord God: Any man of the house of Israel who takes his idols into his heart and sets the stumbling block of his iniquity before his face, and yet comes to the prophet, I the Lord will answer him Myself because of the multitude of his idols, that I may lay hold of the hearts of the house of Israel, who are all estranged from Me through the idols' of their hearts. "Therefore say to the house of Israel. Thus says the Lord God:.... Any one... who separates himself from Me, taking his idols into his hearts and putting the stumbling block of his iniquity before his face, and yet comes... to inquire for himself of Me, I the Lord will answer him Myself; and I will set My face against that man... and cut him off.... and you shall know that I am the Lord" (Ezek. 14:2-8).

Praise the Lord! Glory and praise to our heavenly Father who has provided us the Precious Spiritual Rock, and to the Spiritual Rock our Lord Jesus forever and ever!

**\* Christ the Spiritual Rock that Strikes the Earth Filled with Idols**

"Why do the nations conspire, and the peoples plot in vain? The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the Lord and His anointed, saying, Let us burst their bonds asunder, and cast their cords form us" (Ps. 2:1-3).

"The kings of the earth set themselves in array, and the rulers were gathered together against the Lord" (Acts 4:26).

All the nations of today are, like "in the days of Noah, "full of evil "imagnations of the thoughts of their hearts, " rise "against the Most High, " "cast down the truth to the ground, " and "exalt themselves to establish the vision" (Matt. 24:37, Gen. 6:5, Dan. 7:25, 8:12, 11:14).

They do not give heed to the word, "The heavens are the Lord's heavens, but the earth He has given to the sons of men" (Ps. 115:16), which is God's great principle, and they (the sons of men) do not set their hearts to live honestly and sincerely on earth but, while engaging in evil conducts they strive to occupy the stars that belong to the domain of God alone challenging against Him in heaven. But as He sees them, "He

who sits in the heavens laughs: the Lord has them in derision" (Ps. 2:4).

"Be broken, you peoples, and be dismayed; give ear, all you far countries:... Take counsel together, but it will come to naught; speak a word, but it will not stand" (Isa. 8:9,10). "The pride of your heart has deceived you... who say in your heart, 'Who will bring me down to the ground?' Though you soar aloft like the eagle, though your nest is set among the stars, thence I will bring you down." "The horror you inspire has deceived you, and the pride of your heart, you who live in the clefts of the rock, who hold the height of the hill.

Though you make your nest as high as the eagle's, I will bring you down from there, says the Lord" (Obad. 1:3,4, Jer. 49:16). \*

"Thus says the Lord God: It shall not stand, and it shall not come to pass," "says the Lord" (Isa. 7:7, Obad. 1:4).

The Lord said, "I will be gracious to whom I will be gracious, and will show mercy on whom I will show mercy" (Ex.33:19). "I work and who can hinder it?" (Isa. 43:13). "But the meek" and "the righteous" people "shall possess the land (the stars), and dwell upon it for ever" (Ps. 37:11, 29). But "the wicked shall be cut off... Yet a little while, and the wicked will be no more; though you look well at his place, he will not be there" (Ps. 37:9, 10).

And the richer and wealthier their countries become,

the more completely they become corrupted and demoralized, becoming more like a world of beasts. And their societies are jumbled up in all sorts of impurities and fornications regardless of night or day, time and place, old or young (Gal. 5:19). They are not human beings having the likeness of God; but rather, they are becoming more like beasts wearing the mask of man. This is the moral state of especially the wealthy nations in the world today.

In fact, the depravation of today's world has become the same as that of the days of Noah. How would God feel when He beholds this world?

"He who has an ear, let him hear what" God says. (Rev. 2:17)

"I will utterly sweep away everything from the face of the earth, says the Lord. I will sweep away man and beast; I will sweep away the birds of the air and the fish of the sea. I will overthrow the wicked; I will cut off mankind from the face of the earth, says the Lord" (Zeph. 1:2,3).

All countries of the earth are absorbed in making terrible and appalling weapons in order to shed innocent blood of their neighboring countries. The deadly weapons that they make to kill their neighboring brethren are so appalling and terrifying and offensive to God and man that they make us shudder and fall in despair and faint.

If the goods that had been used for making deadly weapons to kill their neighbors had been spent for relief



expenses for their own as well as for their neighboring countries, so numerous millions of God's children would have never starved to death every year as happening today.

When God made heaven and earth in the beginning, He provided all things sufficiently so that all His children can share nature's abundant supplies with fairness and full satisfaction no matter how big the world population grows to be.

...The Lord has made everything for its purpose (Pro. 16:4). But greed and selfishness of man and of nations have made so great disparity between the rich and the poor, that some are absorbed in luxury and dissipation while others suffer from poverty and starvation. This is one of the greatest evils of the earth that brings the wrath of God upon the earth.

If the nations of this world had accumulated provisions instead of piling up tons of deadly weapons used to kill their neighboring countrymen, by putting money and materials spent for making weapons to buy relief foods, they could have coped with such terrible disasters as happening in these days with confidence and wisdom.

But the reality is different. Some countries enjoy abundance of provisions that God has given them to share with one another in love, but they grab it all to themselves and regard it as their weapon, exalting it above God. Other countries have a blessing of abundant underground resources, but they make it their idol and threaten and despise their neighbors with it.

Some other countries have accumulated abundant supplies of killing weapons, and exalting them above God, they make them their idol, and threaten their neighboring countries with them.

In this way every country on earth has set up numerous idols for her own and exalt them above God and persecute, abuse, kill, and curse her neighbors. Now the longsuffering of God has come to the limit, and He is sending "the Spiritual Rock." "the Stone cut out by no human hand" to this earth filled with idols and wickedness.

...And in the days of those kings, "... a stone was cut out by no human hand, and it smote the image on its feet, ... then the images (idols) of the iron, the clay, the bronze, the silver, and the gold, all together were broken in pieces and became like the chaff of the summer threshing floors; and the wind carried them away, so that not a trace of them could be found. But the stone, " Christ the Spiritual Rock, " that struck the image became a great mountain and filled the whole earth. " And the kingdom of Christ, the Spiritual Rock " shall never be destroyed nor shall its sovereignty be left to another people. It shall break in pieces all these kingdoms " of the earth " and bring them to an end, and it shall stand forever. " The people that shall live in this kingdom are those who have not served any idols of their hearts or idols of any country but devoted themselves only to serve the Father and Jesus Christ. These people who have become "the saints of the Most High shall receive the kingdom, and possess the



## 16. Jesus Christ, Our Righteousness

“The wages of sin is death” (Rom. 6:23).

“Since all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God, they are justified by His (God’s) grace as a gift, through the redemption which is in Christ Jesus” (Rom. 3:23,24). “For no human being will be justified in His sight by works of the law, since through the law comes knowledge of sin. But now the righteousness of God has been manifested apart from law, although the law and the prophets bear witness to it, the righteousness of God through faith in Jesus Christ for all who believe. For there is no distinction, since all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God, they are justified by His grace as a gift, through the redemption which is in Christ Jesus, whom God put forward as an expiation by His blood, to be received by faith. This was to show God’s righteousness, because in His divine forbearance He had passed over former sins; it was to prove at the present time that He Himself is righteous and that He justifies him who has faith in Jesus” (Rom. 3:20-26).

“Then what becomes of our boasting?... On what principle? On the principle of works? No, but on the principle of faith. For we hold that a man is justified by faith apart from works of law” (Rom. 3:27,28).

“Since God is one, He will justify the circumcised on the ground of their faith and the uncircumcised through their faith. . . . God so loved the world, that He gave

His only begotten Son,” and “for our sake He made Him to be sin who knew no sin, so that in Him we might become the righteousness of God” (Rom. 3:30, John 3:16,2 Cor. 5:21).

Therefore “as many as received” the Son of God, “to them gave He power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on His name: which were born not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man,” nor of the works of man: “it is the gift of God—not because of works, lest any man should boast” (John 1:12,13, Eph. 2:8,9).

### \* The Substitute Sentenced to Death

When man violated the sacred law of God, the wages of his sin was death (Rom. 6:23). The price he had to pay for the sin he had committed was death. This was the requirement of the law of justice of the government of heaven. There was no other way for man but to die. Since he had been condemned to death, he was merely waiting for the execution day. His power or any good deeds or any effort or anything would be of no effect in atoning his sins or satisfying the requirements of God’s holy and righteous law that he himself had violated. Moreover, if he attempts to come to God with deeds done in his own righteousness, it will be regarded worse than a filthy rag. Everyone was to relinquish his life as a result of his sin. “O wretched man that I am! Who will deliver me from this body of death?” (Rom. 7:24).

At this time Christ the holy Son of God who was equal with God took upon Himself humanity, and, by giving His own life and blood for sinners, satisfied the requirements for the sacred and righteous law of heaven in order that He might pay the dreadful debt that sinners must pay. And then by imparting His merit and righteousness freely to all sinners who look to Him and come to Him, He opened the way for sinners to become righteous and enjoy liberty without price. Now the sinners, by the power of the grace of Christ are enabled to keep the sacred law of God freely which they could not but break in the past, and to enjoy again boundless liberty and peace within the vast circle of the lawfulness of heaven.

#### \* Those Who Receive Rewards Without Merit

"Now to one who works, his wages are not reckoned as a gift but as his due. And to one who does not work but trusts Him who justifies the ungodly, his faith is reckoned as righteousness. So also David pronounces a blessing upon the man to whom God reckon righteousness apart from works: Blessed are those whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered; blessed is the man against whom the Lord will not reckon his sin" (Rom. 4:4-8). "What does the Scripture say? Abraham believed God, and it was reckoned to Him as righteousness" (Rom. 4:1,3). People came to Jesus and said, "What must we do to be doing the works of God?" (John 6:28). What great works should

we accomplish to be gladly accepted by God? Jesus answered them, "This is the works of God, that you believe in Him whom He has sent" (John 6:29). To restate it, however great works you may achieve with painstaking effort, they are of no value and of no use before God. Only when you come to your Father with Christ's righteousness and His merits of blood whom God has sent, He reckons them as worthy and gladly accepts you.

But when the goodness and loving-kindness of God our Saviour appeared, He saved us, not because of deeds done by us in righteousness, but in virtue of His own mercy, by the washing of regeneration and renewal in the Holy Spirit, which He poured out upon us richly through Jesus Christ our Saviour, so that we might be justified by His grace and become heirs in hope of eternal life" (Titus 3:4-7). "For all who are clothed with Christ's righteousness and led by the Spirit of God are sons of God" (Rom 8:14), "for in Christ Jesus you are all sons of God, through faith." "Therefore, since we are justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ" (Gal. 3:26, Rom. 5:1).

"You know that you were ransomed from the futile ways inherited from your fathers, not with perishable things such as silver or gold, but with the precious blood of Christ, like that of a lamb without blemish or spot" (1 Peter 1:18, 19). "Christ gave Himself for our sins to deliver us from the present evil age, according to the will of our Father" (Gal. 1:4). "While we



were still weak, at the right time Christ died for the ungodly... One will hardly die for a righteous man—though perhaps for a good man one will dare even to die. But God shows His love for us in that while we were yet sinners Christ died for us" (Rom. 5:6-8). Jesus said, "The bread which I shall give for the life of the world is My flesh" (John 6:51).

### \* Salvation—a Gift of God

"Behold the Lamb of God, who takes away the sin of the world!" (John 1:29).

"We were by nature children of wrath, like the rest of mankind. But God, who is rich in mercy, out of the great love with which He loved us, even when we were dead through our trespasses, made us alive together with Christ (by grace you have been saved), and raised us up with Him, and made us sit with Him in the heavenly places in Christ Jesus, that in the coming ages He might show the immeasurable riches of His grace in kindness toward us in Christ Jesus. For by grace you have been saved through faith; and this is not your own doing, it is the gift of God—not because of works, lest any men should boast" (Eph. 2:3-9).

"And you He made alive, when you were dead through the trespasses and sins..." (Eph. 2:1).

**\* Because We Became Citizens of Heaven, We Keep the Law of Heaven.**

"Do we then overthrow the law by this faith? By no means! On the contrary, we uphold the law" (Rom. 3:31). Yes, it is true that not a soul can be saved by his own good deeds. Yet if a soul that has received salvation through faith refuses to come to God and obey His precepts and commandments, he cannot be saved, either. When a young man came to Jesus asking, "Good Master, what must I do to inherit eternal life?", Jesus said, "If you would enter life, keep the commandment" (Matt. 19:17). "He who has My commandments and keeps them, he it is who loves Me; and he who loves Me will be loved by My Father, and I will love him and manifest Myself to him" (John 14:21). "He who says 'I know Him' but disobeys His commandments is a liar, and the truth is not in him."

"All who keep His commandments abide in Him, and He in them..." "If you do this you will never fall; so there will be richly provided for you an entrance into the eternal kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ" (1 John 2:4, 3:24, 2 Peter 1:10, 11).

He who is trying to reach heaven by his own works in keeping the law is attempting an impossibility. Yet if a man seeks to be saved without obeying heaven's law and principle claiming that he is saved by the free gift of Christ's merit, he is worse. Although we are not saved by observing the law (commandment) of God per se, yet, because we are saved by God's grace we are to keep the rules and orders and commandments of His government as good citizens in heaven. A conception that since a believer is saved by the merit of

Christ, he is free to work unrighteousness is the most dreadful evil and indulgence that brings greatest misery. "Every one who commits sin is guilty of lawlessness: sin is lawlessness" (1 John 3:4). "Do we then overthrow the law by this faith? By no means! On the contrary, we uphold the law" (Rom. 3:31).

Jesus said, "Think not that I have come to abolish the law and the prophets; I have come not to abolish them but to fulfil them. For truly, I say to you, till heaven and earth pass away, not an iota, not a dot, will pass from the law until all is accomplished" (Matt. 5:17,18). "If you keep My commandments, you will abide in My love, just as I have kept My Father's commandments and abide in His love" (John 15:10). "Although He was a Son, He learned obedience" ... and was "made perfect." (Heb. 5:8,9) and how much more is the case with us sinful and wicked!

The requirement for eternal life is no less than it was in the Garden of Eden before the fall, perfect obedience to the law of God and living in perfect accordance with it. When fallen men live a life of obedience to God's law through the merit of the blood of Christ. He gains God's grace and is invited to the paradise to partake of the tree of life.

### \* Fruits of "Righteousness by Faith"

"You will know them by their fruits" (Matt. 7:16). There are two kinds of righteousness by faith: first is the imputed, second is the imparted. The first

enables us to become candidates for heaven and the second makes us become fitted to live in heaven. Apart from these two, especially the second, we cannot inherit heaven.

Finally, I would like to say about true fruits manifested in the lives of the redeemed by receiving the righteousness of Christ, that is, the second "righteousness by faith."

Although God is a God of justice and love and the Justifier of sinners through the merits of Christ, as long as the sinner continues practicing his known sins while neglecting known duties, Christ's robe of righteousness cannot cover his soul. Before God justifies a man, He requires of his soul perfect obedience. In order to retain His justification, continual obedience is required, and by active faith that works by love he must purify his soul.

On the cross Christ bore the heavy burden of sin with His own body and has taken away the curse of sin from all those who believe in Him as a personal Saviour. He drove out the controlling power of sin from their hearts, and molded their lives and characters, that they might manifest the distinction of His grace and purity. He pours His Spirit upon the suppliant; for He knows that all believers must be freed from sense of curse and condemnation by the law and to be saved from the degradation of sin.

This is the perfect life, the life apart from sin that is acceptable to God, that is manifested in the lives of the believers that have accepted Christ's righteousness by faith.

The believer is fitted for heaven by Christ's abiding presence, by putting on the garment of His righteousness, and by the influence of the Holy Spirit that sanctifies him through the truth. Without these processes of sanctification, no one can attain to fitness for heaven. Unless we are qualified to abide in holy atmosphere by the influence of the Holy Spirit and Christ's righteousness, we will not find happiness in heaven. In order to enter heaven we must meet the requirements of the law: "You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your strength, and with all your mind; and your neighbor as yourself" (Luke 10:27).

By beholding Jesus, by continual working of the Holy Spirit, the believer advances from grace to grace, from power to power, from character to character. Until he attains unto the measure of the full stature in Christ Jesus, He ceases not his spiritual growth, and at the end he bears the image of Christ.

Thus Christ removes the curse of sin from the heart of His child and sets him free from all its effects and action. Now a complete change is manifested in the life of the believer who has been justified by faith: from a life of degradation and corruption, to a life of regeneration, whereby all his thoughts and desires are continuously channeled toward the kingdom of God. And he becomes a partaker of the divine nature. Sin can no longer take control of his life and he will lead a life free from sin. This is the true fruit of faith born

in the lives of the believers who have received the true righteousness and merits of Christ.

"You know that He appeared to take away sins... No one who abides in Him sins; no one who sins has either seen Him or known Him. Little children, let no one deceive you. He who does right is righteous, as He is righteous. He who commits sin is of the devil; for the devil has sinned from the beginning. The reason the Son of God appeared was to destroy the works of the devil..." Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for His seed remaineth in him; and he cannot sin, because he is born of God. In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil" (1 John 3:5-10, K.J.V.).

"And every man that hath this hope in him purifieth himself, even as He is pure" (1 John 3:3, K.J.V.).

And living the life of faith that works by love, as Christ did, they visit the sick, care for the poor, help the widows and fatherless, clothe the naked, and satisfy the hungry. They love all the children of God; and meekness and truth guide their footsteps. Their countenances display their experience. People take knowledge of them that they have been with Jesus and learned of Him.

Christ and the believer become one, and His beauty of character is revealed in those who are vitally connected with the Lord, the source of power and love. In this way, the Lord's lovely character and spirit are manifested to the world. This is the perfect and vic-

torious life and fruit born of those who have accepted the true righteousness of Christ as their own.

Praise the Lord! Glory and praise and thanksgiving forever to our Lord Jesus, our Righteousness and Merit and Power who gives us complete freedom from the power of sin and leads us to victory! Praise the Lord!

### 17. Jesus Christ, Our High Priest

"Therefore, holy brethren, who share in a heavenly call, consider Jesus, . . . the High Priest" (Heb. 3:1).

"Consider Jesus the High Priest. Who is 'the High Priest'? What is His work? Why do we call Jesus 'our High Priest'?"

Jesus, resurrected and ascended: what is He doing today in heaven? This is what the children of God must know and "consider deeply" in these last days.

In ancient days God commanded Moses to build a sanctuary in which He would personally dwell. "Let them make Me a sanctuary, that I may dwell in their midst." (Ex. 25:8)

The sanctuary that He commanded Moses to build was the earthly sanctuary that was the pattern and shadow of "the true sanctuary" in which He dwells in heaven. "According to all that I show you concerning the pattern of the tabernacle, and of all its furniture, so you shall make it." "Make them after the pattern for them, which is being shown you on the mountain" (Ex. 25:9, 40).

And Moses built the sanctuary according to the pattern that God had shown him concerning the true sanctuary in heaven. Paul testified to this, saying, "It is symbolic for the present age. According to this arrangement, gifts and sacrifices are offered which . . . are the copies of the heavenly things. . . . For Christ ascend-



ed has entered, not into a sanctuary made with hands, a copy of the true one, but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God on our behalf" (Heb 9:9,23,24).

"Now the point in what we are saying is this: we have such a High Priest. One who is seated at the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in heaven, a Minister in the sanctuary and the true tent which is set up not by man but by the Lord" (Heb. 8:1,2).

#### \* The Structure of the Sanctuary

The structure of the sanctuary built by Moses after the pattern of the heavenly sanctuary was like this: the walls had the appearance of massive gold. It consisted of two apartments called the holy and the most holy place. In the holy place were the candlestick, with its seven lamps giving light to the whole interior, and the table of shewbread and the altar of incense glittering like burnished gold. The ceiling was formed by the gorgeous curtain wrought with figures of angels in blue, and purple, and scarlet. And in the most holy place stood the ark in which was kept the law of God (The Ten Commandments). Above it was the mercy seat surmounted by two cherubim, on at each end. In this apartment was manifested the visible glory of God, before which none but the high priest could enter and stand. The matchless splendor of the earthly sanctuary reflected to human vision the glories of the heavenly temple. But the abiding place of the King of kings, where thousand thousands minister unto Him, and ten

thousand times ten thousand stand before Him (Dan. 7:10); that temple, filled with the glory of the eternal throne, where seraphim, its shining guardians, veil their faces in adoration, could find, in the most magnificent structure ever reared by human hands, but a faint reflection of its vastness and glory. Yet important truths concerning the heavenly sanctuary and the great work there carried forward by Jesus for man's redemption are taught by the earthly sanctuary and its services.

#### \* The Ministration of the Earthly Sanctuary

The ministration of the earthly sanctuary consisted of two divisions; the priests ministered daily in the holy place, while once a year the high priest performed a special work of atonement in the most holy for the cleansing of the sanctuary. Day by day the repentant sinner brought his offering to the door of the tabernacle and, placing his hand upon the victim's head, confessed his sins, thus in figure transferring them from himself to the innocent sacrifice. The animal was then slain. This symbolized the death of innocent Jesus in the sinner's stead, bearing all their sins.

In typical ministration commanded to Moses, while the high priest was performing the service in the most holy place on the Day of Atonement, all the children of Israel assembled around the sanctuary and spent the day in deep searching of heart and in contrition. The Lord said to Moses, "On the tenth day of this seventh month is the Day of Atonement; it shall be for you

a time of holy convocation, and you shall afflict yourselves and present an offering by fire to the Lord. And you shall do no work on this same day; for it is a day of atonement, to make atonement for you before the Lord your God. For whoever is not afflicted on this same day shall be cut off from his people" (Lev. 3:26-29).

"You shall afflict yourselves, and shall do no work, either the native or the stranger who sojourns among you; for on this day shall atonement be made for you, to cleanse you; from all your sins you shall be cleaned before the Lord" (Jer. 16:29,30).

In this way, on the Day of Atonement, those who searched their hearts in contrition before God were not cut off from the people but became pure and holy, freed and redeemed from all sins they had committed all the year.

#### \* The Ministration of the Heavenly Sanctuary

Even in Moses, typical ministration on the Day of Atonement, all the children of Israel, so solemnly with fear and trembling, searched and afflicted themselves around the sanctuary, and by so doing they could escape from being cut off from the people; but now we are living in more solemn and more fearful age when Jesus our High Priest has entered the Most Holy Place of the heavenly sanctuary where is seated our glorious heavenly Father surrounded by thousand thousands and ten thousand times ten thousand of angels and seraphim, and is now almost closing His

work of intercession and His last petition before the Father with His blood in behalf of every child from the first inhabitant of the earth to all who are living today. How much more should we now with greater fear and trembling and humility of heart devote ourselves to strict heart-searching and contrition and confession for our sins and defects? If we persist our stubbornness denying to search and humble ourselves, none of us will be able to perpetuate his life in his sins and defects any longer. His soul and his name shall be cut off forever from God's holy congregation (Lev. 23:29).

"Therefore, my beloved, ... work out your own salvation with fear and trembling" (Phi. 2:12). "Examine yourselves, whether ye be in the faith; prove your own selves. Know ye not your own selves, how that Jesus Christ is in you, except ye be reprobates?" (2 Cor. 13:5, K.J.V.). "Yet even now," says the Lord, "return to Me with all your heart, with fasting, with weeping, and with mourning" (Joel 2:12). "Purify yourselves, you who-bear the vessels of the Lord." "Unto two thousand and three hundred days; then shall the sanctuary be cleansed" (Isa. 52:11, Dan. 8:14, K.J.V.).

The destiny of everyone on the face of the earth, whether eternal life or death, is now being eternally decided in the heavenly sanctuary by the final service of Jesus our High Priest. Repentance for sin and prayers for pardon of all sinners on earth are accepted only while Jesus stays in the heavenly sanctuary as the High

Priest. But soon He will come out of the sanctuary, and no one's repentance and confession will be accepted. As He comes out, He does not come out with His robe of sin-atonement High Priest but with the robe of the King of kings that judges and destroys sinners. And He solemnly declares: "He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still" (Rev. 22:11). This is the final decision of every one's destiny. Therefore all prodigals in the world must come to Jesus their merciful High Priest today, on this very day, and receive pardon and cleansing. "Behold, now is the acceptable time: behold, now is the day of salvation."

"At the acceptable time I listen to you, and help you on the day of salvation" (2 Cor. 6:2).

Especially to all returned prodigals Jesus will distribute white robes woven by heaven's loom: and this is the wedding garment we are to be attired in when entering His marriage feast in heaven—the robe of character (Matt. 22:11). The robe of character means possessing perfect character like the Father in heaven and Christ without a spot or a wrinkle. Therefore now when Jesus is waiting to take off our sinners, filthy garments with His power and authority of the High Priest, we must now come to Him and change our clothes soiled and stinking from sins and faults with the white robe of regeneration woven by heaven's loom. Those who lose this golden opportunity, their names will be eliminated forever from the book of life

in Jesus' hand. Now in the heavenly sanctuary He is weighing every one's deed and character one by one who professed to follow Him in order to finally complete the book of life. This is the grave "Investigative Judgement" that is to be executed at the end of the earth's history (Rev. 14:7, Isa. 65:6,7). Those who pass this judgment are those who possess spotless character, and in whose "mouth is found no guile." (Rev. 14:5)

The High Priest says, "I am the Alpha and Omega, the first and the last, the beginning and the end. Blessed are those who wash their robes, that they may have the right to the tree of life and that they may enter the city by the gates" (Rev. 22:13,14).

"And the angel said to me, Write this: Blessed are those who are invited to the marriage supper of the Lamb" (Rev. 19:9).

"Therefore, holy brethren... consider Jesus... the High Priest" (Heb. 3:1).

"For Christ has entered, not into a sanctuary made with hands, a copy of the true one, but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God on our behalf... as the High Priest. "...Consequently He is able for all time to save those who draw near to God through Him, since He always lives to make intercession for them" (Heb. 9:24,25, 7:25).

Praise the Lord! Glory and praise and thanksgiving forever to Jesus our High Priest who is still performing His service in the most holy place in the heavenly sanctuary to atone our sins forever and give us everlasting liberty! Praise the Lord!



## 18. Jesus Christ Who is Equal with God the Father

### (1) Christ who is Equal with God

"Though He was in the form of God" and equal with God He "did not count equality with God a thing to be grasped, but emptied Himself, taking the form of a servant, being born in the likeness of men" (Phi. 2:6-7).

From the beginning the three Gods—the Holy Father, the Holy Son, and the Holy Spirit—are all equal with One Another: "merciful and gracious and slow to anger," the omnipotent Gods (Ex. 34:6). These three Gods made all things in heaven and earth together, blessed them together, took care of them in love together. When earthly children had fallen They sacrificed together to save them. From the beginning these three Gods were sitting on one throne, and at one table consulted and discussed together and worked together. And they are called the Triune God. No One is dominated by nor was born of The Other. They are self-existent from eternity. The nature of Their lives is a mystery that cannot be disputed among men. It will probably be solved when we finally meet Their face to face in heaven and ask.

Then why, being equal, is One called God the Father and Another God the Son—One high, Another low? That is because, when earthly children had fallen and been doomed to death, One of the Three Gods rose

up, took off His kingly robe and crown, handed over to Another forsaking all His glory and power and authority and majesty, and as a Son of God He came down to this earth. This God is the Saviour called by the name of Jesus Christ from the earthly sinners. One who had been equal with the other two Gods came down in Bethlehem in the land of Judea as the Son of God and also as a Son of man (Mary).

O what an amazing fact it is! What is more, as He came to this world of sin, besides being called the Son of God, He was given another degrading name—"the Lamb of God" (John 1:29), the name of an animal. O what a deplorable truth it is! The Almighty God became a Son of God, then a Son of man; and as if He had been a son of an animal (as a Lamb), He was killed. Oh! what an amazing sacrifice! It is a mystery of the universe, a mystery of all the worlds, and an everlasting mystery! The infinite love, the infinite sacrifice, the infinite humiliation of God the Son is an incomprehensible mystery of love, so infinitely deep, so infinitely high, so infinitely broad that neither angels of heaven nor the redeemed children of the earth can penetrate through the eternal ages.

When the position of the Father and of the Son was settled in heaven, the Holy Father said, "I shall be to Him a Father, and He shall be to Me a Son." But "let all God's angels worship Him" (Heb. 1:5,6). He is "My dedicated One" (Isa. 42:19) and "My Fellow" (Zech. 13:7). Yes, if Jesus had been truly the Son of God before His position as a Son was settled in heaven, He must



be a Son derived from the body of the Father, that is, His derivative. But not so; Jesus is the self-existent Almighty God who "is without father or mother or genealogy, and has neither beginning of days nor end of life" (Heb. 7:3), who is equal with God the Father.

"For unto us a child is born, unto us a Son is given; and the government shall be upon His shoulder: and His name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace" (Isa. 9:6, K.J.V.). "We know that the Son of God... is the true God and eternal life" (1 John 5:20). He Himself says, "I am the Alpha and the Omega, says the Lord God, who is and who was and who is to come, the Almighty, "... and the living One; I died, and behold, I am alive forevermore, and I have the keys of hell and of death." "He that believeth in Me, though he were dead, yet shall he live; and whosoever liveth and believeth in Me shall never die" (Rev. 1:8, 18, John 11:25, 26, K.J.V.).

Praise the Lord! Glory and praise and thanksgiving forever to God our Saviour Jesus who loved me so much, who, in order to save me, "did not count equality with God a thing to be grasped, but emptied Himself, taking the form of a servant," the position of the Son of God, then of the Son of man, and was slain as a Son of an animal—the Lamb! Praise the Lord!

(2) Jesus who is the Partner to God the Father

Jesus is an eternal Friend and a Partner to God the Father from the beginning. He Himself is God.

"Awake, O sword, against My Shepherd, and against the Man that is My Fellow, saith the Lord of hosts" (Zech. 13:7). This is what the Father spoke about His Son's cruel death on the cross who has been His Fellow from the foundation of the world.

Now let us follow up the footsteps of two Gods who have been walking side by side as one from the beginning.

\* "At beginning of His work, the first of His acts of old... before the beginning of the earth,... when there were no depths,... before the mountains had been shaped,... then I (Holy Son) was beside Him, like a master workman" (Pro. 8:22-30).

\* "In the beginning was the Word (Holy Son), and the Word was with God (Holy Father)... He was in the beginning with God; all things were made through Him" (John 1:1-3).

\* "God (Holy Father) sent the Son (Holy Son) into the world, ~~not to condemn~~ the world, but that the world might be saved through Him" (John 3:17).

\* "This is life eternal, that they might know Thee the only true God (Holy Father), and Jesus Christ (Holy Son) whom Thou hast sent" (John 17:3, K.J.V.).

\* "Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of God (Holy Father), and the faith of Jesus (Holy Son)" (Rev. 14:12, K.J.V.).

\* "Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God (Holy Father), believe also in Me (Holy Son)" (John 14:1, K.J.V.).

\* "God (Holy Father) is not man, that He should lie, or a son of man that He should repent. Has He said, and will He not do it? Or has He spoken, and will He not fulfil it? (Num. 23:19).

\* "He who has My commandments and keeps them, he it is who loves Me (Holy Son); and he who loves Me will be loved by My Father (Holy Father), and I will love him and manifest Myself to him" (John 14:21).

\* "If a man love Me (Holy Son), he will keep My words, and My Father (Holy Father) will love him, and We will come unto him and make Our abode with him" (John 14:23, K.J.V.).

\* "If any one serves Me, he must follow Me... If any one serves Me (Holy Son), the Father (Holy Father) will honour him" (John 12:26).

\* "For God (Holy Father) so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son (Holy Son), that whosoever believeth in Him, should not perish but have everlasting life" (John 3:16, K.J.V.).

\* "Behold, the hour cometh, yea, is now come, that ye shall be scattered, every man to his own, and shall leave Me alone: and yet I (Holy Son) am not alone, because the Father (Holy Father) is with Me" (John 16:32, K.J.V.).

\* "Believe Me that I (Holy Son) am in the Father (Holy Father) and the Father in Me" (John 14:11).

\* "I (Holy Son) and the Father (Holy Father) are one" (John 10:30).

\* "The two Godheads on the throne (Rev. 5:13)

\* "The two Godheads who created the heaven and earth (Pro. 8:22-30)

\* "The two Godheads having children (Gen. 1:26, 27)

\* "The two Godheads consulting all things together (Zech. 6:13)

\* "The two Godheads appeared where baptism was performed (Matt. 3:16,17)

\* The two Godheads appeared on the Mount of Transfiguration (Matt. 17:1-5)

\* "The two Godheads on the cross (John 16:32, Luke 23:44-46)

\* "The two Godheads in heaven's marriage feast (Matt. 22:1-13)

\* "The two Godheads on the eternal throne of heaven (Mark 16:19, Rev. 7:9,10)

From the day of eternity until today the two Godheads have been working intimately in cooperation with Each Other being a perfect working pair like a pair of chopsticks or the thread and a needle. "Jesus Christ is the same yesterday and today and forever" (Heb. 13:8).

The two Godheads will remain as a pair forever (Zech. 13:7) working and rejoicing together. "I and My Father are one" (John 10:30).

(3) The Two Godheads Worthy of Receiving Eternal Glory and Praise and Adoration

"After this I looked" (Rev. 4:1).

\* "The twenty-four elders fall down before Him who is seated on the throne and worship Him who lives forever and ever; they cast their crowns before the throne, singing, 'Worthy art Thou, our Lord and God (Holy Father), to receive glory and honour and power, for Thou didst create all things, and by Thy will they existed and were created.' " "Then I looked, and I heard around the throne and the living creatures and the elders the voice of many angels numbering myriads of myriads and thousands of thousands, saying with a loud voice, 'Worthy is the Lamb (Holy Son) who was slain, to receive power and wealth and wisdom and might and honour and glory and blessing!'" (Rev. 4:10, 11, 5:11, 12).

\* "And I heard every creature in heaven and on earth and under the earth and in the sea, and all therein, saying, 'To Him (Holy Father) who sits upon the throne and to the Lamb (Holy Son) be blessing and honour and glory and might forever and ever!' And the four living creatures said, 'Amen!' and the elders fell down and worshipped" (Rev. 5:13, 14).

\* "And I heard a loud voice in heaven, saying, 'Now the salvation and the power and the kingdom of our God (Holy Father) and the authority of His Christ (Holy Son) have come, for the accuser of our brethren has been thrown down, who accuses them day and night before our God'" (Rev. 12:10).

\* "Then the seventh angel blew his trumpet, and there were loud voices in heaven, saying, 'The kingdom of the world has become the kingdom of our Lord (Holy Father) and of His Christ (Holy Son), and He shall reign forever and ever'" (Rev. 11:15).

\* "After this I looked, and behold, a great multitude which no man could number, from every nation, from all tribes and peoples and tongues, standing before the throne and before the Lamb, clothed in white robes, with palm branches in their hands, and crying out with a loud voice, 'Salvation belongs to our God (Holy Father) who sits upon the throne, and to the Lamb (Holy Son)! And all the angels stood round the throne and round the elders and four living creatures, and they fell on their faces before the throne and worshipped God" and the Lamb (Rev. 7:9-11).

"Hallelujah! For the Lord our God the Almighty (Holy Father) reigns. Let us rejoice and exult and give Him the glory, for the marriage of the Lamb (Holy Son, Jesus) has come, and His Bride (the saints of the earth) has made herself ready; it was granted her to be clothed with fine linen, bright and pure, for the fine linen is the righteous deeds of the saints. " "Blessed are those

who are invited to the marriage supper of the Lamb” (Rev. 19:6-9).

Praise the Lord! To God our Saviour who, being equal with the Father, in order to save us, became the Son of God, and the Son of man, and the Son of an animal to be slain as a Lamb, be glory and praise and honour and reverence and thanksgiving forever and ever! Hallelujah! Amen!

### 19. Jesus Christ, Lord of the Sabbath

“The Son of man is Lord of the Sabbath” (Matt. 12:8).

“The Son of man is Lord of the Sabbath” means.

“The Son of man is the Owner and the Possessor of the Sabbath who had enacted it in the beginning.”

“Lord of the Sabbath” implies greater meaning; that

is, “The Son of man is God who established the Law—The Ten Commandments—which contain the Sabbath law.” Yes. When Jesus finished His work of creating the universe with His Father in the beginning, He also established “The Ten Commandments”—the sacred law of love and justice—which is the foundation of the government of heaven and the transcription of His character and the foundation of His throne; and He hallowed the Sabbath in it as a day of commemoration of the creation.

And He established it as an institution that all His children in the universe should remember and keep it holy, and on the day they were to give glory and thanksgiving to their Creator; and on the other hand, He, by bestowing special blessings upon them as a token of His tender love, appointed it to be a day of joy and happiness for God and man. This was to be a precious day of greatest blessings on which God and His children were privileged to meet together every week, and with all the rest of our family in the universe to enjoy most joyful hours together.

This important blessed Sabbath is the sacred festival of creation that cannot be abolished nor changed as long as God and Jesus and the government of heaven



continue to exist. That is why Jesus said, "Think not that I have come to abolish the law"—the Sabbath: "I have come not to abolish them but to fulfil them" (Matt. 5:17). In those days the Jewish leaders established numerous unnecessary and burdensome rules that God had not commanded in the Scriptures, that tended to pervert the purpose of Sabbath which had been given for man's sake (Matt. 2:27), for the happiness of all inhabitants of the universe. Jesus' mission was to restore the Sabbath to its original purpose and state, "to fulfil it" (Matt. 5:17) by removing from His children heavy burdens and toilsome yokes caused by their false leaders' misapplication of Sabbath.

Our Lord resolutely carried out His Sabbath reform: disregarding all the sabbath rules enacted by the Jews that were loaded down with rigorous exactions and traditions that made obedience painful and burdensome. He healed the sick, performed missionary works, taught people in the field and on the mountainside on the Sabbath. Yet what calls for our attention is that He still perfectly observed the Sabbath that He Himself had established in the beginning in perfect accordance with its claims and requirements. He, "as His custom was (Luke 4:16), " kept the Sabbath and said, "If you keep My commandments, you will abide in My love, just as I have kept My Father's commandments and abide in His love" (John 15:10). "For this is the love of God, that we keep His commandments. And His commandments are not burdensome. " "If you would enter life, keep the commandments" (1

John 5:3, Matt. 19:17). "For truly, I say to you, till heaven and earth pass away, not an iota, not a dot, will pass from the law until all is accomplished" (Matt. 5:18). "Pray that your flight may not be in winter or on a Sabbath. For then there will be a great tribulation, such as has not been from the beginning of the world until now, no, and never will be" (Matt. 24:20, 21).

What an explicit and exhaustive request He made to us! Even during "the great tribulation" in the last days, such as "has not been from the beginning until now and never will be"; He commanded us to be faithful even unto death to defend the Sabbath, did He not? The Sabbath, "the Lord's day" (Rev. 1:10) is indeed the God's day in heaven, the angels' day, and the day of the government of the universe. Therefore those who faithfully keep this day are those who are loyal to the government of the universe and to God and Jesus: they possess a mark of His people (Ezek. 20:12,20). God acknowledges them as His own faithful people and puts a mark on their foreheads that testifies His possession (Ezek. 9:4-6, Rev. 7:2,3). And He takes them to heaven. Therefore the Sabbath is a distinction between His people and the world and a touchstone that proves their loyalty to God.

But what a great number of our brethren in Christian world are observing Sunday, the first day of the week, having forfeited the true, holy Sabbath, "the Lord's day" (Rev. 1:10) that the Lord has established and kept Himself until today and requested us to keep

until the last day and which we will also keep through all eternity in new heaven and new earth. (Isa. 66:22,23).

The first day (Sunday), our Lord has neither established it nor commanded us to keep it holy nor kept it Himself, on the contrary, it is on this day that He began His work of creation in the beginning. And while He was on earth He worked very hard on this day. Then what made us keep this day that is unknown to either God or angels? Where has this day come from? How has it been initiated? And why is it being kept so prevalently today? Let us listen to God's words of prophecy and the testimonies of candid witnesses in past ages.

\* Testimony of the Bible

"We have the prophetic word made more sure. You will do well to pay attention to this as to a lamp shining in a dark place, until the day dawns and the morning star rises in your heart" (2 Peter 1:19).

"That day will not come, unless the rebellion comes first, and the man of lawlessness is revealed, the son of perdition, who opposes and exalts himself against every so-called god or object of worship, so that he takes his seat in the temple of God, proclaiming himself to be God" (2 Thess. 2:3,4)

"He shall speak words against the Most High, and shall wear out the saints of the Most High, and shall think to change the times and the law" (Dan. 7:25).  
 "And the whole earth followed" him "with wonder" (Rev. 13:3,4).

\* Testimonies of Candid Witnesses  
The British Encyclopedia (The article for Sunday)

"The first Sunday law was decreed by the half-pagan, half-Christian Roman emperor Constantine I in 321 A.D."

"History of the Christian Church" vol. 3, 5th ed., p.380, note 1

"On the venerable Day of the Sun let the magistrates and people residing in the cities rest, and let all workshops be closed. In the country, however, persons engaged in agriculture may freely and lawfully continue their pursuits; because it often happens that another day is not so suitable for grain-sowing or for vine-planting; lest by neglecting the proper moment for such operations the bounty of heaven should be lost."

North British Review (secular)

"That very day was the Sunday of their heathen neighbors and respective countrymen: and patriotism gladly united with expediency in making it at once their Lord's day and their Sabbath."—February, 1853. Vol. XVIII, p. 409.

Christian at Work (Evangelical)

"So some have tried to build the observance of Sunday upon apostolic command, whereas the apostles gave no command on the matter at all."—Editorial, April 19, 1883, p.3.

Christian Union (Congregational)

"When, why, and by whom was the day of rest changed from the seventh to the first day of the week, not by any positive authority, but by a gradual process."—"Inquiring Friends" June, 11, 1879, p. 530.

Neander (church historian) says:

"The festival of Sunday, like all other festivals, was always only a human ordinance, and it was far from the intentions of the apostles to establish a divine command in this respect, far from them and from the early apostolic church to transfer the laws of the Sabbath to Sunday."—"The History of the Christian Religion and Church" (Rose's translation) p. 186.

William Pryn, noted Puritan historian (1655)

"The seventh-day Sabbath was... solemnized by Christ, the apostles, and primitive Christians, after the resurrection till this Laodicean Council did in a manner quite abolish the observation of it."—"The council of Laodicea, about the year of Christ 360... first settled the observation of the Lord's day, and prohibited... the keeping of the Jewish Sabbath under an anathema."—"A Brief Polemical Dissertation Concerning... the Lord's day—Sabbath," pp. 34, 44.

R. W. Dale, M.A., (Congregationalist of England)

wrote:

"It is quite clear that, however rigidly or devoutly we may spend Sunday, we are not keeping the Sabbath... The Sabbath was founded on a specific, divine

command. We can plead no such command for the obligation to observe Sunday... There is not a single sentence in the New Testament to suggest that we incur any penalty by violating the supposed sanctity of Sunday."—"The Ten Commandments" pp. 127-129.

Dr. E. T. Hiscox, Baptist, Author of "The Baptist Manual"

"There was and is a commandment to keep holy the Sabbath day, but that Sabbath day was not Sunday. It will be said, however, and with some show of triumph, that the Sabbath was transferred from the seventh to the first day of the week... Where can the record of such a transaction be found? Not in the New Testament—absolutely not. ... Of course, I quite well know that Sunday did come into use in early Christian history as a religious day, as we learn from the Christian Fathers and other sources. But what a pity that it comes branded with the mark of paganism, and christened with the name of the sun god, then adopted and sanctioned by the papal apostasy, and bequeathed as a sacred legacy to Protestantism!"—Paper by Dr. E. T. Hiscox. Read Aug. 20, 1893, at Saratoga, N. Y., Baptist ministers' meeting in "Source Book", pp. 513, 514.

John Frith (1572)

"We are in a manner as superstitious in the Sunday as they (the Jews) were in the Saturday, yea, and we are much madder. For the Jews have the word of God

for their Saturday. sith (since) ... they were commanded to keep the seventh day solemn. And we have not the word of God for us, but rather against us; for we keep not the seventh day, as the Jews do, but the first, which is not commanded by God's law."—"Workers" p. 96 in "The Whole Works of W. Tyndall, John Frith, and Doctor Barns."

#### The Baptist Teacher

"The law long antedates the age of Moses. It is as old as the race... There is evidence of Sabbath observance from the very first, and the Lord from Sinai enjoins that be 'remembered' which was already in existence... As it was from the beginning, so it will be to the end... Even the law of the Sabbath is as binding now as ever. Every recurring seventh day is, in a peculiar sense, to be hallowed."—July, 1895, p.317.

Richard Watson (Methodist) says:

"There is not on record any divine command, issued to the apostles, to change the Sabbath from the day on which it was held by the Jews, to the first day of the week."—"Watson's Theological Institutes" (Methodist), 3rd., Vol. III, p.270.

Dr. Lyman Abbott (Congregationalist) says:

"The current notion that Christ and His apostles authoritatively substituted the first day of the week for the seventh is absolutely without any authority in the New Testament."—"Christian Union", June, 26, 1890.

Mgr. Segur (Roman Catholic) says:

"It was the Catholic Church which, by the authority of Jesus Christ, has transferred this rest to the Sunday, in remembrance of the resurrection of our Lord. Thus the observance of Sunday by the Protestants is an homage they pay, in spite of themselves, to the authority of the (Catholic) Church."—"Plain Talk About the Protestantism of Today" p.213.

Cardinal Gibbons (Roman Catholic) says:

"You may read the Bible from Genesis to Revelation, and you will not find a single line authorizing the sanctification of Sunday. The Scriptures enforce the religious observance of Saturday, a day which we never sanctify."—"The Faith of Our Fathers", 1917 ed. p.89.

Catholic Mirror:

"The Catholic Church, with its unmistakable authority, has prescribed Sunday, for the observance of the Sabbath instead of the ancient Biblical Sabbath day."—Oct.22, 1893.

Eusebius, a famous bishop and a flatterer of

Constantine, says:

"All things, whatever that it was duty to do on the Sabbath, these we have transferred to the Lord's day."—Robert Cox, "Sabbath Laws and Sabbath Duties", p.538.

Pope Leo XIII says:

"We have the position and the prerogatives of the



Almighty God on earth."—Conference Report p.304

Quoted by Lucius Ferraris, in "Prompta

Bibliotheca," art. "Papa II," pars. 1, 12-14, 30; translation in "Source Book," pp. 409, 410.

"The Pope is of so great dignity and so exalted that he is not a mere man, but as if were God, and the vicar of God."

"Hence the Pope is crowned with a triple crown, as king of heaven and of earth and of the lower regions."

"He is likewise the divine monarch and supreme emperor and king of kings."

"Moreover the superiority and the power of the Roman Pontiff by no means pertain only to heavenly things, to earthly things, and to things under the earth, but are even over angels, than whom he is greater."

"The pope is of so great authority and power that he can modify, explain, or interpret even divine laws... The pope can modify divine law, since his power is not of man, but of God, and he acts as vicegerent of God upon earth."

• God's Ten Commandments •

1. Thou shalt have no other gods before Me.
2. Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of anything that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth: thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the Lord thy God am a

jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate Me; and shewing mercy unto thousands of them that love Me: and keep My commandments.

3. Thou shalt not take the name of the Lord thy God in vain: for the Lord will not hold him guiltless that taketh His name in vain.

4. Remember the Sabbath Day, to keep it holy. Six days shalt thou labour, and do all thy work: but the seventh day is the Sabbath of the Lord thy God: in it thou shalt not do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, thy manservant, nor thy maidservant, nor thy cattle, nor thy stranger that is within thy gates: for in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the Lord blessed the Sabbath Day, and hallowed it.

5. Honour thy father and thy mother: that thy days may be long upon the land which the Lord thy God giveth thee.

6. Thou shalt not kill.

7. Thou shalt not commit adultery.

8. Thou shalt not steal.

9. Thou shalt not bear false witness against thy neighbor.

10. Thou shalt not covet thy neighbor's house, thou shalt not covet thy neighbor's wife, nor his manservant, nor his maidservant, nor his ox, nor his ass, nor anything that is thy neighbor's.

• "The Ten Commandments" Changed by the Roman Catholic Church •

1. I am the Lord your God, you shall not have other gods before me.
2. You shall not make wrong use of the name of the Lord.
3. Keep holy the Sabbath day.
4. Honor your father and mother.
5. You shall not commit murder.
6. You shall not commit adultery.
7. You shall not steal.
8. You shall not bear false witness against your neighbor.
9. You shall not desire your neighbor's wife.
10. You shall not desire your neighbor's possessions.

Cardinal Gibbons (Roman Catholic) says:

"But you may read the Bible from Genesis to Revelation, and you will not find a single line authorizing the sanctification of Sunday. The Scriptures enforce the religious observance of Saturday, a day which we never sanctify."—"The Faith of Our Fathers" 1893 ed., p. 111.

The Catholic Record:

"The Sabbatical observation of Sunday is not grounded on the Scriptures but on our traditions; therefore it is no doubt an institution of the Catholic Church."—September 17, 1893.

\* Words of Jesus. Lord of the Sabbath

Jesus says:

"Why do you transgress the commandments of God for the sake of your tradition?" (Matt. 15:3)

"Why do you call Me 'Lord, Lord', and not do what I tell you?" (Luke 6:46)

"In vain do they worship Me, teaching as doctrines the precepts of men" (Matt. 5:9).

"Do you not know that if you yield yourselves to any one as obedient slaves, you are slaves of the one whom you obey, either of sin, which leads to death, or of obedience, which leads to righteousness?" (Rom. 6:16).

"Think not that I have come to abolish the law and the prophets; I have come not to abolish them but to fulfill them" "For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled" (Matt. 5:17, 5:18, K.J.V.). *also in the Sabbath of Jesus p. 100*

"I warn every one who hears the words of the prophecy of this book: if any one adds to them, God will add to him the plagues described in this book, and if any one takes away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God will take away his share in the tree of life and in the holy city, which are described in this book" (Rev. 22:18, 19).

"Not every one who says to Me, 'Lord, Lord', shall enter the kingdom of heaven, but he who does the will of My Father who is in heaven. On that day [Jesus' Second Advent] many will say to Me, 'Lord, Lord, did

we not prophesy in Your name, and cast out demons in Your name, and do many mighty works in Your name?' And then will I declare to them, 'I never knew you; depart from Me, you evildoers'" (Matt. 7:21-23).

"He who has My commandments and keeps them, he it is who loves Me; and he who loves Me will be loved by My Father, and I will love him and manifest Myself to him" (John 14:21).

"If you love Me, you will keep My commandments" (John 14:15).

"Do you not know that in a race all the runners compete, but only one receives the prize?" (1 Cor. 9:24).

"An athlete is not crowned unless he competes according to the rules" (2 Tim. 2:5).

"If you would enter life, keep the commandments" (Matt. 19:17).

"To the law and to the testimony! If they do not speak according to this word, they have no light of dawn" (Isa. 8:20, N.I.V.).

"For whoever keeps the whole law but fails in one point has become guilty of all of it. For He who said, 'Do not commit adultery,' said also, 'Do not kill'. He who said, 'Do not kill', said also, 'Keep the Sabbath holy'; He who said, 'Keep the Sabbath holy', said also, 'Serve no other gods before Me.' " "If you do not commit adultery but kill" or transgress any other one point, "you have become a transgressor of the law" (James 2:10, 11, Ex. 20:8,3,5).

"So speak and so act as those who are to be judged under the law of liberty" (James 2:12).

"Whosoever commiteth sin transgress also the law; for sin is the transgression of the law" (1 John 3:4, K.J.V.).

"Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus" (Rev. 14:12, K.J.V.).

"Then the dragon Satan was angry with the woman, and went off to make war on the rest of her offspring, on those who keep the commandments of God and bear the testimony to Jesus. And he stood on the sand of the sea" (Rev. 12:17).

"Be faithful unto death, and I will give you the crown of life" (Rev. 2:10).

"Because thou hast kept the word of My patience, I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth" (Rev. 3:10, K.J.V.).

"And he that overcometh, and keepeth My works unto the end, to him will I give power over the nations" (Rev. 2:26, K.J.V.).

"To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God" (Rev. 2:7, K.J.V.).

"He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches" (Rev. 2:7).

"I Jesus have sent My angel to you with this testimony for the churches" (Rev. 22:16).

"Surely I am coming soon" (Rev. 20:20).

Amen. Hallelujah! To God our Lord Jesus who is

“Lord of the Sabbath”, “the same yesterday, today, and forever”, who pours upon us and all our brethren in the universe special blessings abundantly on the Sabbath day be glory and praise and thanksgiving forever and ever! Praise the Lord!

## 20. Jesus Christ who is Coming Again

Now it was time for Jesus our Saviour to return to heaven having finished His work of redemption of His earthly children by giving His life and blood on the cross. He gave His parting speech to His disciples, saying, “Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in Me. In My Father’s house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto Myself: that where I am, there ye may be also” (John 14:1-3, K.J.V.).

“And when He had said this, as “the disciples” were looking on, He was lifted up, and a cloud took Him out of their sight. And while they were gazing into heaven as He went, behold, two men stood by them in white robes, and said, “Men of Galilee, why do you stand looking into heaven? This Jesus, who was taken up from you into heaven, will come in the same way as you saw Him go into heaven” (Acts 1:9-11).

“This Jesus, who was taken up from you into heaven will come” again “in the same way as you saw Him go into heaven.”—O what a comforting and encouraging and joyful promise this was to the disciples who were inconsolably sad by their Master’s unexpected parting!

3000 years before Jesus took human nature, Enoch the seventh generation from Adam had prophesied in



regard to Jesus' second coming, saying, "Behold, the Lord came with His holy myriads, to execute judgment on all, and to convict all the ungodly of all their deeds of ungodliness which they have committed in such an ungodly way, and of all the harsh things which ungodly sinners have spoken against Him" (Jude 1:14, 15).

And 1500 years before He came as a baby, Job had said, "I know that my Redeemer lives, and at last He will stand upon the earth, . . . whom I shall see on my side, and my eyes shall behold, and not another. My heart faints within me!" (Job 19:25,27). He looked forward to Jesus' Second Advent.

Centuries before His First Advent, a poet named Asaph prophesied, "Our God comes, He does not keep silence, before Him is a devouring fire, round about Him a mighty tempest" (Ps. 50:3).

Jesus Himself spoke of His Second Advent,— "Then will appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven, and then all the tribe of the earth will mourn, and they will see the Son of man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory; and He will send out His angels with a loud trumpet call, and they will gather His elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other" (Matt. 24:30,31). He said that when He comes again, He would not come in secret and in silence but in the sight of all nations in the world. The apostle John also testified of His second coming, "The sky vanished like a scroll that is rolled up, and every mountain and island was removed from its place. Then

the kings of the earth and the great men and the generals and the rich and the strong, and every one, slave and free, hid in the caves and among the rocks of the mountains, calling to the mountains and rocks, 'Fall on us and hide us from the face of Him who is seated on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb; for the great day of their wrath has come, and who can stand before it?' " (Rev. 6:14,17).

The apostle Paul also testified,— "When the Lord Jesus is revealed from heaven with His mighty angels in flaming fire, inflicting vengeance upon those who do not know God and upon those who do not obey the gospel of our Lord Jesus. They shall suffer the punishment of eternal destruction and exclusion from the presence of the Lord and from the glory of His might" (2 Thess. 1:7-9).

The prophet Isaiah spoke about the idolaters at the time of His Second Advent, "In that day men will cast forth their idols of silver and their idols of gold, which they made for themselves to worship, to the moles and to the bats, to enter the caverns of the rocks and the clefts of the cliffs, from before the terror of the Lord, and from the glory of His majesty, when He rises to terrify the earth" (Isa. 2:20,21).

When He comes the second time He does not come in secret making it known only to certain people like His first advent. He comes with great glory—the glory of His own and of the Father—in the sight of all the universe, of all the world, of all nations, and of all races with His innumerable mighty angels. Then all nations and races will tremble and wail before Him.

Then let us find out the purpose of His Second Advent. He said, "When the Son of man comes in His glory, and all the angels with Him, then He will sit on His glorious throne. Before Him will be gathered all the nations, and He will separate them one from another as a shepherd separates the sheep from the goats, and He will place the sheep at His right hand, but the goats at the left." And those at His left hand will be thrown "into the eternal fire", and those at the right hand—"the righteous—into eternal life" (Matt. 25:31-34, 41, 46).

Now He finishes His harvesting from the earth according as John the baptist testified,—His "fan is in His hand, and He will thoroughly purge His floor (earth), and gather His wheat into the garner; but He will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire" (Matt. 3:11, 12, K.J.V.).

Moreover He reaps every one righteous who was slain for his loyalty to his Saviour and his God in all ages.

"For the Lord Himself will descend from heaven with a cry of command, with the archangel's call, and with the sound of the trumpet of God. And the dead in Christ will rise first; then we who are alive ~~who~~ who are left, shall be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air; and so we shall always be with the Lord" (1 Thess. 4:16, 17). Amen! Praise the Lord!

The Holy Spirit prophesied about those who would scorn and ridicule and deride with their false doctrines at the truth of Jesus' Second Advent so evident that

heaven and earth could not deny,—"First of all you must understand this, that scoffers will come in the last days with scoffing, following their own passions and saying, 'Where is the promise of His coming? For ever since the fathers fell asleep, all things have continued as they were from the beginning of creation' " (2 Peter 3:3, 4). Indeed the time has already come. In reference to this, Peter the disciple of Jesus rebuked in a firm voice, "We did not follow cleverly devised myths when we made known to you the power and coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, but we were eyewitnesses of His majesty" (2 Peter 1:16).

And also, as He was going up we heard the voice saying, "This Jesus, who was taken up from you into heaven, will come in the same way as you saw Him go into heaven" (Acts 1:10, 11); and witnessed with our eyes a reduced version of His Second Advent on the Mount of Transfiguration (Matt. 16:28, 17:1-6). Elijah represented those who would be taken up alive without ever experiencing death at the last day in reward for their loyalty to Him. Moses represented those who have died in all ages while keeping their fidelity to Him and ascend after being resurrected. And Jesus Himself transfigured with His face shining like the sun, illustrating how He would appear the second time with His face shining "brighter than the (midday) sun" (Acts 26:13) in majesty. "We were eyewitnesses of His majesty" (2 Peter 1:16), testifies Peter.

Some people say that His Second Advent will come in secret. Behold, I tell you beforehand unto you. "Wherefore if they shall say unto you, Behold, He is

in the desert; go not forth. Behold, He is in the secret chambers: believe it not" (Matt. 24:25,26, K.J.V.).  
 "For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west: so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. . . . And He shall send His angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together His elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other. . . . Watch therefore, for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come" (Matt. 24:27, 31,42, K.J.V.).

"But the day of the Lord will come like a thief, and then the heavens will pass away with a loud noise, and the elements will be dissolved with fire, and the earth and the works that are upon it will be burned up. Since all these things are thus to be dissolved, what sort of persons ought you to be in lives of holiness and godliness, waiting for and hastening the coming of the day of God, because of which the heavens will be kindled and dissolved, and the elements will melt with fire! But according to His promise we wait for new heavens and a new earth in which righteousness dwells. Therefore, beloved, since you wait for these, be zealous to be found by Him without spot or blemish, and at peace" (2 Peter 3:10-14). "Yet a little while, and the coming One shall come and shall not tarry; but my righteous one shall live by faith. . . . Therefore do not throw away your confidence, which has a great reward. For you have need of endurance, so that you may do the will of God and receive what is promised" (Heb. 10:37,38,35,36).

"Behold, He is coming with the clouds, and every eye will see Him, every one who nailed and pierced Him: and all tribes of the earth will wait on account of Him. Even so, Amen" (Rev. 1:7).  
 Praise the Lord! "Amen. Come, Lord Jesus! The grace of the Lord Jesus be with all the saints" who wait for His Second Coming. "Amen. Praise the Lord! (Rev. 22:20,21).

## 21. Jesus Christ Who Will Live with Us in a Mansion Forever

"Let not your heart be troubled; ye believe in God, believe also in Me. In My Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto Myself; that where I am, there ye may be also" (John 14:1-3, K. J. V.).

Now we will have time to take a close look at the new heaven and new earth where our God Jesus will take us to and live with us forever.

"Then I saw a new heaven and a new earth; for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away, and the sea was no more" (Rev. 21:1).

The heaven of the new earth in which we shall live forever with Jesus is not so full of pollution, leaking with snowstorm and rainstorm and so often covered with gloomy and thick clouds as is today. It is a "new heaven". It is clear and bright and lucid, glittering with the dazzling glory of the Father and Jesus, and filled with echoes of songs of praise of the angelic host and all creatures and of the redeemed ones.

And the "new earth" on which we shall live and stroll endlessly with Jesus is not so gloomy as is today. It is not so full of contaminations and the disease causing germs and the infectious diseases like today. There is no one wicked, biting, slandering and abusing, killing one another, and striving for supremacy.

There is found no trace of degradation and ruin, sorrow and sigh. It is a fresh and holy land with no pollution, no disease, no foul germs, where all creatures freely rejoice and sing in perfect harmony, where various kinds of delicately tinted flowers and grass and trees sing and dance together without their leaves or blossoms ever falling even after a billion years. The dwellers of the land love one another, concede to one another, and serve one another. They love their neighbors as or even more than they love themselves. However long they will live there, they do not know envy or jealousy, on the contrary, they endeavor to increase their neighbors' happiness with ever deepening and broadening love and affection. They are ever happy folks who do not know pain or death nor become old or weary, but are always filled with ever fresh vitality, for they are under the lovely and tender care of God and Jesus. The heavenly Father and Jesus and angels and all the redeemed fellow saints constitute one family altogether.

On the land there is "the river of the water of life, bright as crystal, flowing from the throne of God and of the Lamb through the middle of the street of the city; also, on either side of the river, the tree of life with its twelve kinds of fruit, yielding its fruit each month; and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations" (Rev. 22:1,2). "There shall no more be anything accursed" there, "but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it, and His servants shall worship Him; they shall see His face, and His name shall



be on their foreheads. Night shall be no more; they need no light of lamp or sun, for the Lord God will be their light" (Rev. 22:5). "The dwelling of God is with men. He will dwell with them, and they shall be His people, and God Himself will be with them; He will wipe away every tear from their eyes, and death shall be no more, neither shall there be mourning nor crying nor pain any more, for the former" "cursed" things have passed away" (Rev. 21:3,4).

Jesus said, "If I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto Myself; that where I am there ye may be also" (John 14:3). Now let us take a look at our home where we will live with Him forever.

"He... showed Me the holy city Jerusalem coming down out of heaven from God, having the glory of God, its radiance like a most rare jewel, like a jasper, clear as crystal" (Rev. 21:10,11). This new Jerusalem "had a great, high wall, with twelve gates, and at the gates twelve angels, and on the gates the names of the twelve tribes of the sons of Israel" redeemed from the earth "were inscribed; on the east three gates, on the north three gates. On the south three gates, and on the west three gates." "And the twelve gates were twelve pearls, each of the gates made of a single pearl" (Rev. 21:12,13,21). "By its light shall the nations walk; and the kings of the earth shall bring their glory into it." "And the city has no need of sun or moon to shine upon it, for the glory of God is its light, and its lamp is the Lamb" (Rev. 21:24,23). "They shall bring into

it the glory and the honour of the nations," "and its gates shall never be shut by day—and there shall be no night there" (Rev. 21:26,25). "And I saw no temple (no church) in the city, for its temple is the Lord God the Almighty and the Lamb" (Rev. 21:22).

O so glorious and splendid is our home that our Lord Jesus has made us with His whole heart and skill. He loved us so much that He gave up the heaven and even His own life for us. The home that He gave us is "as beautiful as a bride adorned for her husband" (Rev. 21:2). Its wall is not built of red bricks or cement. It is built of jasper, clear as glass (Rev. 21:18). And each of the gates are made of a single pearl (Rev. 21:21). The gate is so wide that hundreds of vehicles of the world may pass through it at once. So tremendous are the gates, and they are not made of wood or iron. Each of them is a single pearl. Moreover, the street of the city is paved with pure gold, transparent as glass (Rev. 21:21). O what a glorious and brilliant home we have! However rich and wealthy one may be, could he surround his house with jewelry wall (of jasper)? However great power one may possess in the world, could he possess a pearl gate? Is there any king or a president who is able to pave the roads in his palace or in the city with pure gold? Our Lord Jesus, the King of the universe alone can possess and enjoy such a nice palace and city, who said, "The silver is Mine, and the gold is Mine" (Hag. 2:8). Only the good and faithful people on earth who are faithful even unto death to follow Jesus' example, whom He knows and approves will

possess this holy, brilliant city and live there forever. . . . Nothing unclean shall enter it, nor any one who practices abomination or falsehood, but only those who are written in the Lamb's (Jesus') book of life" (Rev. 21:27).

"And he who talked to me had a measuring rod of gold to measure the city and its gates and walls. The city lies foursquare, its length the same as its breadth, and he measured the city with his rod, twelve thousand stadia: its length and breadth and height are equal. He also measured its wall, a hundred and forty-four cubits by a man's measure, that is, an angel's" (Rev. 21:15-17).

The city is a vast square about two and half times larger than the land of Korea my country (North and South Combined). This immense city is decorated and paved with various kinds of rare jewels.

At the twelve gates around the city are standing twelve angels, one at each gate. But they are not standing there to protect it from thieves. There is no thief there, nor even anyone who speaks lies in new heaven. They are not standing there to shut them in the evening and open them in the morning, either. He said, "Night shall be no more." "Its gates shall never be shut by day—and there shall be no night there" (Rev. 21:25).

Then what is their duty? What are they doing all the time standing at the gates?

In the countless stars in this vast universe there live God's children who have never fallen. They ceaselessly visit the house of God, the capital of the universe where

also live the once-fallen children of God in order to pay a visit of courtesy and to take care of other affairs.

These visitors are welcomed by these twelve angels at the twelve gates. The angels gladly welcome the honored guests from all star-worlds and give them a hearty and cheerful send-off. "They shall bring into it the glory and the honour of the nations. . . . By its light shall the nations walk; and the kings of the earth shall bring their glory into it" (Rev. 21:26,24).

What a joyful duty they have! All heavenly angels have the privilege to discharge this joyful duty by turns. You brethren and sisters who are reading this book, when you go there soon with Jesus may you also stand with the twelve angels at the twelve gates and join them to bid welcome to your brethren visitors from countless stars! Ah! do we not feel urge to run to our eternal golden sweet home quickly that our Jesus has made for us with love?

"The foundations of the wall of the city were adorned with every jewel: the first was jasper, the second sapphire, the third agate, the fourth emerald, the fifth onyx, the sixth carnelian, the seventh chrysolite, the eighth beryl, the ninth topaz, the tenth chrysoprase, the eleventh jacinth, the twelfth amethyst. . . . And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and on them the twelve names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb" (Rev. 21:19,20,14).

O what a rare, blessed, holy city it is! I have neither seen nor heard of most of these jewels. I am just filled

with exultation like a little baby. This wonderful home of ours tells how wonderful love our Lord Jesus pours upon us. It is our eternal home, our eternal nest that He has prepared for us (John 14:3).

“Then He showed me the river of the water of life, bright as crystal, flowing from the throne of God and of the Lamb through the middle of the street of the city; also on either side of the river, the tree of life with its twelve kinds of fruit, yielding its fruit each month; and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations” (Rev. 22:1,2).

O what a blessed gift upon gift, reward upon reward it is! Once a friend asked me a question in a meeting— “Do you believe all these things will certainly come true?” “Yes, I do certainly believe it.” I replied. How about you readers? “Do you really believe all these words of promises and gifts of God to the letter? I believe you do. We have no doubt that the sages in ancient times like Confucius in the East or Socrates could not tell an untruth or deceive others with their mouth. If these human sages who lived on earth could not even tell a lie, how can we imagine that our heavenly Father and Jesus tell a lie making up an nonexistent story as if it were a truth and uselessly ridicule us? “God, who never lies, promised” all these things “ages ago” (Titus 1:2). “He who sat upon the throne said, ‘Write this, for these words are trustworthy and sure’ ... But as for the ... faithless, the polluted, as for murderers, fornicators, sorcerers, idolaters, and all liars, ... they shall not enter the city, ... their lot shall be

in the lake that burns with fire and sulphur, which is the second death” (Rev. 21:5,8). “These words are trustworthy and true ... what must soon take place” (Rev. 22:6).

You brethren and sisters may not dare say to God or Jesus sited at His right hand, “You are a defrauder.” Yet if you do not believe sincerely the promises and rewards that He has plainly assured us, you are saying to Him “You are a defrauder.”

Dear brethren and sisters, let us now listen to the following statement and fortify our belief.

“Take care, brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil, unbelieving heart, leading you to fall away from the living God. But exhort one another every day as long as it is called ‘today’, that none of you may be hardened by the deceitfulness of sin. For we share in Christ, if only we hold our first confidence firm to the end” (Heb. 3:12-14). “Now the Spirit expressly says that in later times some will depart from the faith by giving heed to deceitful spirits and doctrines of demons through the pretensions of liars whose consciences are seared” (1 Tim. 4:1,2). “For the time is coming when people will not endure sound teaching, but having itching ears they will accumulate for themselves teachers to suit their own likings, and will turn away from listening to the truth and wander into myths” (2 Tim 4:3,4.) But “every word of God proves true: He is a shield to those who take refuge in Him. Do not add to His words, lest He rebuke you, and you be found a liar” (Pro. 30:5,6). “The just shall live by faith” (Rom. 1:17, K. J. V.).

Praise the Lord! To our real Father and Jesus our Lord, our Eldest Brother who loved us so much that He gave up the heaven and came down to this earth and was crucified in our stead and then made us the best home in the universe with His own hands to live with us there forever be glory and praise and thanksgiving and adoration forever and ever! And may all brethren and sisters who are walking with God "apart from sin" (Heb. 9:28) with firm confidence in His positive promises and rewards enjoy eternal life and happiness in the holy golden castle, golden street, by the river of water of life beside which is standing the tree of life, and also receive all other blessings written in this book! Amen. Praise the Lord!

**22. With What Shall I Come Before Jesus My God and Saviour?**

"With what shall I come before the Lord, and bow myself before" Jesus my Saviour "on high?" (Micah 6:6).

"He has showed you, O man, what is good; and what does the Lord require of you but to do justice, and to love mercy, and to walk humbly with thy God?" (Micah 6:8). "If you hearken attentively to His voice and do all that I say, then I will be an enemy to your enemies and an adversary to your adversaries," (Ex. 23:22) / "You shall love" and follow "the Lord your God" and Jesus "with all your heart, with all your soul, with all your mind. This is the great and first commandment. And a second is like it, You shall love your neighbor as yourself. On these two commandments depend all the law and the prophets" (Matt. 22:37-40).

**\* Faithfulness**

Jesus said, "You are My witnesses, says the Lord, I am God" (Isa. 43:12,13). "As the Father has sent Me, even so I send you." "Show entire and true fidelity" (John 20:21, Titus 2:10). "I will look with favour on the faithful in the land, that they may dwell with Me." "Moreover it is required in stewards, that a man be found faithful" (Ps. 101:6, I Cor. 4:2, K.J.V.). As I became "the faithful and true witness" unto the Father, you also become "a faithful and wise servant." "Be faithful unto death, and I will give you the crown



of life," and ye "shall not be hurt by the second death" (Rev. 3:14, Matt. 24:45, Rev. 2:10,11).

The faithful servants of our Saviour in all ages accounted their death for His glory as a great privilege and honour. A martyr called Marquiss, after he had been informed of his execution, had such a peaceful good night sleep, and then was dragged and killed. When Ledley a British martyr was visited by his brother the night before his death, his brother tried to comfort him and offered to spend that night with him. But he refused, saying, "I would rather have a good night sleep and die tomorrow." A Bohemian martyr, just before his death, said, "I feel greater joy now than on my wedding day."

#### \* Love for Neighbors

"Little children, ... a new commandment I give you, that you love one another; even as I have loved you."

"Greater love has no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends. You are My friends if you do what I command you. No longer do I call you servants," for My love is in you. (John 13:33,34, 15:13-15)

"Since love covers a multitude of sins..." we know that we have passed out of death into life, because we love the brethren. He who does not love" still "abides in death" (1 Peter 4:8, 1 John 3:14).

"Love is patient and kind: love is not jealous or boastful; it is not arrogant or rude. Love does not insist on its own way; it is not irritable or resentful: it does not rejoice at wrong, but rejoices in the right. Love

bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things. Love never ends; as for prophecies, they will pass away; as for tongues, they will cease; as for knowledge, it will pass away" (1 Cor. 13:4-8).

"I am the Good Shepherd. The Good Shepherd lays down His life for the sheep." "Do you love me?" Then, "be the faithful and wise steward," who "feed My lambs with the spiritual food" "at the proper time." As I gave up My heavenly throne and came down to this dark and desolate earth, to be slain on Calvary's cross in your stead because of My love for you, I ask you to take good, tender care of My lambs, that is, your brethren whom I have entrusted you with loving and cheerful service (John 10:11, 21:17, Luke 12:42, John 21:15,16). Then "you are My friends," "and where I am, there you shall be also; if any one serves Me, the father will honour him" (John 15:14, 12:26). And you and I and the Father will permanently become one family; we shall live in our heavenly mansion. We will "possess the kingdom for ever, for ever and ever" (Dan. 7:18). "Faithfulness to Me" and "love for your neighbors"—nothing but these two I require of you. Put up this love as your "banner over Me" (song. 2:4) and "go through, go through the gates, prepare the way for the people; build up, build up the highway, clear it of stones, lift up an ensign over the peoples" (Isa. 62:10).

"Violence shall no more be heard in your land, devastation or destruction within your borders you shall call your walls Salvation, and your gates Praise...

Your sun shall no more go down, nor your moon withdraw itself; for the Lord will be your everlasting light, and your days of mourning shall be ended. Your people shall all be righteous; they shall possess the land forever, the shoot of my planting, the work of My hands, that I might be glorified. The least one shall become a clan, and the smallest one a mighty nation" (Isa. 60:18-22). "Arise, shine; for your light has come, and the glory of the Lord has risen upon you. For behold, darkness shall cover the earth, and thick darkness the peoples; but the Lord will arise upon you, and His glory will be seen upon you. And nations shall come to your light, and kings to the brightness of your rising" (Isa. 60:1-3).

"Now I will arise, ... now I will lift myself up, now I will be exalted" (Isa. 33:10).

Rise up, lift up high the banner of your love "for the people." Lift it up high (Isa. 62:10).

Praise the Lord! To our Lord Jesus Christ, our eternal King who will arise to show His mighty power among all the nations, our King of glory, Michael the great host, strong and powerful Lord, strong in battle, who is our power, our strength, our light, our shield, and our victory; to Him be glory and might; praise and thanksgiving and adoration forever and ever! Praise the Lord!

... Happiness of Those Who Love Their Neighbors...  
Hearts of those who love their neighbors are always joyful.

Hearts of those who love their neighbors are always happy.  
Those who love their neighbors make their neighbors joyful.  
Those who love their neighbors make their neighbors happy.  
Out of their hearts flows the water of life.  
In their hearts blossom lilies.  
In their hearts the sun never goes down.  
Their hearts always bear abundant fruits every season.  
Those who love their neighbors are loved by both men and children.  
Those who love their neighbors are friends of all people in the world.  
Those who love their neighbors are loved by birds and animals.  
Those who love their neighbors are loved by all nature.  
Those who love their neighbors are loved by the angels.  
Those who love their neighbors are friends of all angels.  
Those who love their neighbors are loved by the Holy Spirit.  
Those who love their neighbors are working together with the Holy Spirit.  
Those who love their neighbors are loved by Jesus.  
Those who love their neighbors are friends of Jesus.  
Those who love their neighbors are loved by God.  
Those who love their neighbors are God's real sons.  
Those who love their neighbors are welcomed in heaven.

Those who love their neighbors are welcomed by all heavenly beings.

Those who love their neighbors are welcomed by all angels.

Those who love their neighbors will live with God in heaven forever.

.....Misery of Those Who Do Not Love Their Neighbors...

Those who do not love their neighbors are always shadowy.

Those who do not love their neighbors are always gloomy.

Those who do not love their neighbors are always unhappy.

Those who do not love their neighbors are always pressed down by burdens.

Those who do not love their neighbors are always destitute of the water of life.

Those who do not love their neighbors are always like arid land.

Those who do not love their neighbors are always like the desert.

Those who do not love their neighbors never have the sunrise in their hearts.

Those who do not love their neighbors do not have blooming of flowers in their hearts.

Those who do not love their neighbors do not bear fruits.

Those who do not love their neighbors are disliked by men and children.

Those who do not love their neighbors are disliked by birds and animals.

Those who do not love their neighbors are disliked by all nature.

Those who do not love their neighbors are disliked by all angels.

Angels depart from those who do not love their neighbors.

All friends depart from those who do not love their neighbors.

The Holy Spirit is grieved by those who do not love their neighbors.

The Holy Spirit departs from those who do not love their neighbors.

Jesus is grieved by those who do not love their neighbors.

Jesus is not a friend of those who do not love their neighbors.

God is disappointed with those who do not love their neighbors.

God does not call them His children who do not love their neighbors.

Heavenly beings do not welcome those who do not love their neighbors.

Those who do not love their neighbors are severed from heaven forever.

..... Praise of Love .....

..How fair and how pleasant art thou. O love, for

delights!"

"He brought me to the banqueting house, and his banner over me was love."

—Song. 7:6. 2:4—

**\* Things to Memorize for Complete  
Regeneration**

Write down the headings for 22 subjects below along with the headings of 24 subjects of the second chapter—"The Only True god"—and meditate upon them continuously in your daily life. And your life will attain to complete regeneration.

**\* Jesus Christ \***

1. Christ's Outward Appearance and Inward Heart
2. Jesus Christ, the True God Who Came in Human Form
3. Jesus Christ, the Creator God of the Universe
4. Jesus Christ, the Only Saviour of Man
5. Jesus Christ, a Friend of Sinners
6. Jesus Christ, a Servant of Man
7. Jesus Christ, a Man of Sorrow
8. Wealth and Poverty of Jesus on Earth
9. Jesus the Nazarite, a Faithful Servant of God
10. Jesus Christ, a Man of Prayer
11. Jesus Christ Who Destroyed the Prison-gate of Death
12. Jesus Christ, the Good Shepherd
13. Jesus Christ the God Who Answers by Fire
14. Jesus Christ, a Stone Cut Out by No Human Hand
15. Jesus Christ, the Precious Spiritual Rock
16. Jesus Christ, Our Righteousness



17. Jesus Christ, Our High Priest
18. Jesus Christ Who is Equal with God the Father
19. Jesus Christ, Lord of the Sabbath
20. Jesus Christ Who is Coming Again
21. Jesus Christ Who will Live with Us in a Mansion Forever
22. With What shall I Come before Jesus My God and Saviour?

Jesus is a personal Saviour and merciful God and an everlasting Friend who gives eternal life to all His children on earth who accept Him as their personal Saviour who dwells in heaven and also live with them in everyday life.

My dear Lord! My proud Jesus! My everlasting God!



## **Chapter IV. Miraculous Regeneration and the Happiness of Sanctified Life**

### **1. Regeneration and Sanctification**

#### (1) Regeneration

Many think that regeneration and sanctification are the same. But they are entirely different from each other. Regeneration is likened to a process of being born anew out of mother's body, and sanctification to a process of growing up everyday to perfect figure and stature or baby's parents. To give an illustration, when a chick is first born of its mother hen it is born into a stone-looking egg bearing no similarity with its mother or father. And it is brooded by the mother hen for a period of time; and then it is born again bearing almost perfect resemblance to its parents. Likewise, when man is born by his mother he is born with heart and character completely different from that of God and Jesus. He comes out with "stony heart"

(Ezek. 36:26) hard, cold, selfish, indiscreet and senseless lacking ears, eyes, mouth to perceive sacred things. But if he is brooded by the Holy Spirit's power for a period of time, he is born again with tender character and image of God and Jesus without a trace of old defects that he had when he was first born, just as the chick breaks out of the hard eggshell with new shape resembling its mother after a period of time in the mother's bosom. And he is now given new, sacred eyes that can see God and the sacred things in heaven, sacred ears that can listen to the voice of God, and sacred mouth that can proclaim God's messages to the world. This is what it means to be born again—regeneration (John 3:3.).

Jesus declared that only those who are born again could enter the kingdom of God (John 3:3,5). The Holy Spirit said, "Hearken to Me, O house of Jacob, all the remnant of the house of Israel," "who were born again in My bosom," "who have been borne by Me from your birth, carried from the womb;" "because you were born again by Me," "even to your old age I am He, and to grey hairs I will carry you. I have made, and I will bear: I will carry and will save" (Isa. 46:3,4).

## (2) Sanctification

As the little chick born the second time out of its eggshell is to grow up to the full measure of the mother, so are spiritual babies born again by the Holy Spirit to grow and "attain to the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ" (Eph. 4:13) as their "heavenly

Father is perfect;" (Matt 5:48) this process is called sanctification. One point here to keep in mind is that as the chick born again from the eggshell cannot keep growing up unless it continuously pecks up and eats the food its mother gives and also feeds on, so those who were born again by the Holy Spirit cannot grow up unless they always feed themselves on the bread of life diligently that comes out of the mouth of God. This is the principle of growing up in true sanctification.

## **2. Regeneration is Accomplished in a Moment**

As the chick comes out of the egg in a moment, so is a man born again in a moment out of the womb of the Spirit. here many people misunderstand and doubt and wonder (John 3:7). Now I am going to demonstrate it with the incidents that have truly taken place. Let us first look into the twelve disciples of Jesus.

As they were following their great Master for more than three years, did they indeed experience regeneration? It is no doubt that they did not even know what the word "regeneration" meant, to say nothing of experiencing it. That is why, just a few days, or even a few hours before their Master's death, they were arguing with one another as to who would be the greatest among themselves, in the face of their Master. But after His ascension a startling miracle and wonder took place among them. In the days of Pentecost they all were regenerated at once during the short ten day period. They were not quarrelsome any longer; they became completely different persons. Such cowardly Peter became a Saint Peter so manly and holy in form and character. John so fretful and resentful, called "a son of the thunder" instantly became an apostle of love. The same miracles were wrought upon all the disciples and all that were with them. Such can be wrought by no one but the Holy Spirit; it is what is called regeneration. This work was not wrought on them continuously for ten days: toward the end of ten days, as the Holy

Spirit was poured upon them in fire instantaneously it was done. As a baby is born in a moment by its mom, they also came forth regenerated instantly after the 10 day period in the bosom of the Holy Spirit. The stony, stubborn, wicked hearts and dispositions had disappeared from them, and holy eyes, ears, and mouth were given them anew from heaven, and they went forth to save the world.

Another example is Jacob one of the fathers of faith. Before he was regenerated he had been cunning and subtle in deceiving others by nature. How many years did he lead a religious life in order to be regenerated? Was he regenerated while he was working in his cousin's house for 20 years? In spite of so long years of pious life, he did not experience regeneration like the 12 disciples of Jesus. For instance, when he was returning to his hometown after 20 years of toilsome life, as he was about to meet with his revengeful brother (Esau), he attempted to bribe him with his own goods (beasts). This shows that he was still a man of cunning nature then. Yet he also came to a surprising experience of regeneration. As he clung to God desperately for help by the brook "Jabbok" having found his scheme failed, that night he attained to true regeneration. Yet this was not accomplished all through the night. As the night was almost over, the moment the mighty hand of God struck his thigh he was suddenly born of the Spirit. He said, "I have seen God face to face, and yet my life is preserved. Therefore "the sun rose upon him as he passed Penuel, limping



because of his thigh" (Gen. 32:30,31).

"The sun risen" upon him represented the bright sun of regeneration risen upon his dark soul rather than the round sun in the sky. This is that sun of regeneration which God said through the prophet Isaiah. — "The sun shall be no more your light by day, nor for brightness shall the moon give light to you by night; but the Lord will be your everlasting light, and your God will be your glory. Your sun shall no more go down, nor your moon withdraw itself; for the Lord will be your everlasting light, and your days of mourning shall be ended" (Isa. 60:19,20).

And since the sun of regeneration and sanctification had risen upon him, fear and sorrow and gloom found no place in his life. Freed from terror of Esau his brother, he began to live a life of heavenly peace and joy and happiness under the bright sun of God's favor.

One more example is the malefactor saved on the cross. If it took several decades or the whole lifetime for one to be regenerated as many people assert today, the malefactor could have never been saved. If it were true, he should have waited on the cross for several decades to be born again and be saved. But Jesus assured him he was saved.

Then did Jesus save him while still unregenerated? No, never; Jesus Himself had said. "Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God" (John 3:3, K.J.V.). Then how could he be saved? Did Jesus accept him unconditionally although he was not regenerated? No, it is ut-

terly unreasonable. He cannot be double-tongued. If he had entered heaven, as a malefactor all sinners in the world would have to be given the same privileges. Then heaven would be all the more terrible. Then how could the malefactor be saved on the cross? There is but one answer: he became regenerated while he was hung on the cross. How could it be? It was a miracle wrought by the supernatural power of the Holy Spirit the mighty God, which neither I nor you readers nor anyone can easily understand. We just believe Jesus' explanation at His word. — "Marvel not that I said unto thee, 'Ye must be born again. The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born' again 'of the Spirit'" (John 3:7,8, K.J.V.).

As we cannot see the strong wind passing swiftly with great power but can see the result, so it is with the supernatural power of the Holy Spirit. We cannot see the power of regenerating and transforming man, but we see plainly the results of its work. We find sinner's ugly form and character changed suddenly to God's holy image and character. None can deny or pick on this truth. This mighty work is wrought upon those who believe the power of the Spirit and seek for it earnestly.

Let me finish off this section by saying one more thing. Sometimes we build a house or repair a part of a completed house. Which is more difficult and takes more time? No one is ignorant of the fact that it costs

more time and energy to build a new house upon the bare ground than to repair a part of an already completed house.

When God produced His children in the beginning, how much time and effort did it cost Him? We read in Genesis (1:25,26) that, after God made thousands of animals on the sixth day, it took him only a short time to bring us forth on earth. It was a work of a split moment. And how can it be that it should take several decades for our all powerful God to repair (regenerate) His already completed children? It is merely an absurd thinking and guess of men. And such faulty thinking and preachings have not come from the Almighty God. To them He says, "You thought that I was one like yourself" (Ps. 50:21).

Peter also strongly testifies to this, "Do not ignore this one fact, beloved, that with the Lord one day is as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day" (2 Peter 3:8). He can finish in just one day that which is to be done for a thousand years and He can extend one days work to a thousand years. "I know that Thou canst do all things, and no purpose of Thine can be thwarted" (Job. 42:2).

"Nothing is too hard for Thee" (Jer. 32:17). Truly our God, the Lord of hosts is the Almighty God, who made the heavens, the earth, the seas, and man in a short moment. Nothing is too hard or impossible with Him throughout heaven and earth. He is so gracious that whoever comes to Him and lays hold on His power He willingly regenerates immediately today as He did

Jacob and His disciples and the malefactor on the cross. "Have faith in God." "With men this is impossible, but with God all things are possible" (Mark 11:22, Matt. 19:26). "All things are possible to him who believes." "Whoever... does not doubt in his heart, but believes that what he says will come to pass, it will be done for him." "If you... believe, you" will "see the glory of God." "All things are possible to him who believes." "I am God Almighty" (Mark 9:23, 11:23, John 11:40, Gen. 17:1).

### 3. The State of a Man Regenerated

In order to know the state of a regenerated man, we are to know first his previous unregenerated state.

Before regeneration every one is the same. "Now the works of the flesh are plain: fornication, impurity, licentiousness, idolatry, sorcery, enmity, strife, jealousy, anger, selfishness, dissension, party spirit, envy, drunkenness, carousing, and the like" (Gal. 5:19-21). Moreover, they are "lovers of self, lovers of money, proud, arrogant, abusive, disobedient to their parents, ungrateful, unholy, inhuman, implacable, slanderers, profligates, fierce, haters of good, treacherous, reckless, swollen with conceit, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God, holding the form of religion but denying the power of it" (2 Tim. 3:2-5).

These are the states of those who are not yet regenerated. Yet as they are regenerated by the supernatural power of the Holy Spirit, they become completely different persons than before. For "the wisdom from above is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, open to reason, full of mercy and good fruits, without uncertainty or insincerity" (James 3:17). They sow in peace everyday to reap righteousness (James 3:18). They become holy men and women who live a life bearing abundant fruit of the Spirit—"love, joy, peace, long suffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance" (Gal. 5:22,23), and "follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, patience, meekness, and fight the good fight of faith and lay hold on eter-

nal life" (1 Tim. 6:11,12). They do not commit sin, and live apart from sin. "Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for His seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God" (1 John 3:9, K.J.V.). With Christlike heart and love, they love their brethren with tender and humble mind and do not return evil for evil or reviling for reviling. They love their enemies, do good to those who hate them, bless those who curse them, and pray for those who abuse them (1 Peter 3:8,9, Luke 6:27,28). Like their heavenly Father, they "do not despise any" or criticize or slander their brethren. They are "kind to the ungrateful and the selfish" (Job 36:5, Luke 6:35). Yet they never allow or compromise, to the least degree, with sin and evil that go astray from the law of God. They are obedient children of God who rejoice not in iniquity but rejoice in the truth, who never walk in the counsel of the wicked, nor stand in the way of sinners, nor sit in the seat of scoffers; but their delight is in the law of the Lord, and on His law they meditate day and night (1 Cor. 13:6, Ps. 1:1,2). This is the true state and life of those who are regenerated.

#### **4. The Regenerate May Fall Again**

There arise many questions as to whether the regenerate by the Holy Spirit may backslide or not. And the Bible says plainly to us, "He may fall. He has the possibility to fall again."

"It is impossible for the saints who have once been enlightened, who have tasted the heavenly gift, who have shared in the Holy Spirit, if they fall away, to be brought back to repentance, because to their loss they are crucifying the Son of God all over again and subjecting Him to public disgrace" (Heb. 6:4-6, N.I.V.).

"If we deliberately keep on sinning after we have received the knowledge of the truth, no sacrifice for sins is left, but only a fearful expectation of judgment and of raging fire that will consume the enemies of God. Any one who rejected the law of Moses died without mercy on the testimony of two or three witnesses. How much more severely do you think a man deserves to be punished who has trampled the Son of God under foot, who has treated as an unholy thing the blood of the covenant that sanctified him, and who has insulted the Spirit of grace?" (Heb. 10:26-29, N.I.V.).

"For if, after they have escaped the defilements of the world through the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again entangled in them and overpowered, the last state has become worse for them than the first. For it would have been better for them never to have known the way of righteousness

than after knowing it to turn back from the holy commandment delivered to them" (2 Peter 2:20,21).

"It has happened to them according to the true proverb. The dog turns back to his own vomit, and the sow is washed only to wallow in the mire" (2 Peter 2:22).

As stated above, although one has been born again and regenerated by the supernatural power of the Holy Spirit, he has the possibility to fall again. Therefore the Bible ceases not to give us warning. There are many cases of backsliders in the Bible like David, Solomon, Saul, Samson, Balaam, and so on who had once been born of the spirit and fell.

Even with Apostle Paul who had the experience of deep communion with the Holy Spirit, experiencing true regeneration while in seclusion in deep desert, backsliding was a constant threat, and said, "Therefore let any one who thinks that he stands take heed lest he fall" (1 Cor. 10:12). "I beat my body and make it my slave so that after I have preached to others, I myself will not be disqualified for the prize." Therefore "I die everyday" (1 Cor. 9:27, 15:31, K.J.V.). How much more should we take heed who are living in this corrupt age? A more evident proof for the possible occurrence of backsliding among those who were born again by the Holy Spirit is shown by the fact that Jesus, although He was the Son of God who had come from heaven, was liable to fall. If He had no possibility to fall, Satan would have not tempted Him three times in the wilderness and followed Him to the cross of



Calvary to defeat Him so persistently, and it would have not been necessary for Jesus to entreat His Father with fasting and cry for power to triumph over all temptations and trials. But He became an unwearied suppliant before God entreating Him for power and strength all through the nights and with fasting so that He might be able to defeat the tempter that sought to cause Him to fall astray at every moment. This shows that the Son of God had a possibility to fall as well. Yet in spite of the tempter's unyielding endeavor He became a perfect, sinless Conquerer without a bit of slip or a mistake, having defeated Satan the enemy completely.

"In the days of His flesh, Jesus offered up prayers and supplications, with loud cries and tears, to Him who was able to save Him from death, and He was heard for His godly fear" (Heb. 5:7).

"For we have not a high priest who is unable to sympathize with our weaknesses, but One who in every respect has been tempted as we are, yet without sin" (Heb. 4:15). "Because He Himself has suffered and been tempted, he is able to help those who are tempted" (Heb. 2:18).

If Jesus who came from heaven had to be on so strict guard against the enemy, how can we escape from falling when we relax our attention? We are to be more and more cautious and watchful and wide-awake. But we are thankful to Him for the fact that before regeneration it was difficult to depart from sin, to live a sinless life, but since we have been regenerated by

the Holy Spirit, it became easy and natural and delightful to shun from sin and, on the other hand, it became hard and awkward to commit sin. Our lives naturally have become holy. Therefore in the battle against the great enemy of good, the regenerate of the Holy Spirit has greater advantage, that is, he can easily defeat the enemy and become a conquerer. Regeneration by the Holy Spirit is so wonderful and precious gift of God. None can deny that it is the first and indispensable condition for ascension. That is why Jesus said, "Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God" (John 3:3, K.J.V.).

Praise the Lord! Glory and praise and thanksgiving and adoration to the Holy Spirit our God who loved us and gave birth to us once again through the womb of His power forever and ever! Praise the Lord!

## 5. Sanctification Is a Lifework

As we have already learned, sanctification means the growing process of the newborn baby in the Spirit to the perfection of his heavenly Father. Therefore the apostle Paul, although he had been regenerated, said as thus, "Not that I have already obtained this or am already perfect; but I press on to make it my own, because Christ Jesus has made me His own. Brethren, I do not consider that I have made it my own; but one thing I do, forgetting what lies behind and straining forward to what lies ahead, I press on toward the goal for the prize of the upward call of God in Christ Jesus" (Phi. 3:12-14).

Sanctification knows no end or stop on earth; it is not a thing to be completed to a certain limit. On the contrary, it will not cease even in heaven, because it is a process of ceaseless growing up to the perfection of our heavenly Father and Jesus. Therefore it is not merely a lifework on earth but a work of eternity.

Enoch who walked in the path of sanctification for 300 years since he had been regenerated at the age of 65 is thought to be far more excellent and holier than us. But as he compared himself with the brethren in heaven, he found that he was like a newborn baby. Compared with the heavenly beings that had never fallen but had been continually transforming to the perfect image of God from eternity, he was indeed a newborn baby just saved from the earth. Although he was 365 year old on earth, as he went to heaven he

was accounted as one year old baby. Because one day in heaven is one year on earth (Ezek. 4:6), he was just one year old baby in heaven. Being less than one third of his age, we are to realize that we are all the less newborn babies that should grow up diligently. Some of our brethren are embraced in the womb of the Holy Spirit now and some others have already been brought forth regenerated from the womb of the Holy Spirit. But the majority of our brethren have not even entered the womb of regeneration and are wandering around outside. What a distressing scene it is!

We all should now come to the Holy Spirit and be embraced by Him and, by getting fed and satisfied with His spiritual milk and with the bread of life from Jesus and with the word that proceeds from the mouth of God everyday (1 Peter 2:2, John 6:48, Matt. 4:4), we are to be born again and keep growing up without ceasing. Then, in due time, we will be translated to heaven like Enoch and become the lovely sons and daughters of the heavenly King growing up unceasingly in boundless joy and happiness.

One thing I greatly appreciate our Triune God is that anyone who has become a child of God through regeneration will be saved no matter when or where he may die since he has experienced regeneration once, unless he wilfully turns back and backslides. Just as a youngster receives a parental care by his mommy as her child no matter whether he is one or two or ten or twenty year old, so do the children of God born again by the Holy Spirit receive warm care and

protection from God and are taken to heaven no matter when they may die. Therefore Jesus acknowledged the malefactor regenerated on the cross as God's child and promised to take him to heaven although he did not have even one day for sanctification. Regeneration is so wonderful a gift of the Holy Spirit, that brings us so precious and important privilege.

"As many as received Him (Jesus), to them gave He power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on His name, and were born again by the Holy Spirit, which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God" (John 1:12, 13, K.J.V.)

Hallelujah! To our tender Holy Spirit who embraces us to have us born again in the form of God like the hen brooding on its eggs, and brings us up with abundant spiritual milk and spiritual food; to Him be glory and praise and thanksgiving forever! Amen. Praise the Lord!

## 6. A Formula for Achieving Miraculous Regeneration

Those who were born again in the image of God by the Holy Spirit are indeed glittering, precious jewels in this dark world and most important beings in the universe. The prophet Daniel called them "the wise, the brightness of the firmament, that should shine as the stars for ever and ever" (Dan. 12:3).

Therefore no one but the wise (Dan. 12:3) can be regenerated and become like the bright stars in the firmament. To introduce the formula of wisdom is the purpose of this subject.

Above all, we are to remember that regeneration is the fruit of cooperation of God with men and of men with God, that is, the result of mutual combined effort. "Unless the Lord builds the house, those who build it labour in vain. Unless the Lord watches over the city, the watchman stays awake in vain. It is in vain that you rise up early and go late to rest, eating the bread of anxious toil." (Ps. 127:1, 2). Without the help of our Almighty God, human effort itself avails nothing; and the persevering endeavor of the all-powerful Holy Spirit avails nothing as long as men remain indifferent and stand by idly. Regeneration is the fruit of the combined effort, combined work, and combined power of the Holy Spirit and man.

**\* The Miraculous Formula for Regeneration**

God's power + My effort = Omnipotence ... ☞ Regeneration

Faith + Work = Fruit..... ☞ Regeneration

Divinity + Humanity = Divine person.. ☞ Regeneration

2 Peter 3:8 (Believe) + John 17:3 (Meditate)

Matt.19:21 (Help the needy)

= 2 Cor. 5:17, Ps. 2:7 ..... ☞ Regeneration

(1) Believe and ask for the omnipotent power of God that can accomplish a thousand years' work in one day and one day's work for a thousand years (2 Peter 3:8), and that can also work miracles in you, allowing you to achieve regeneration in just one day today to which you cannot possibly attain for yourself in your whole lifetime.

(2) You have so far learned John 17:3—the love of the Father in 24 respects and the love of the Holy Son in 22 respects. Meditate upon them always every day combined with ceaseless prayer and praise.

(3) Make use of all you have for the poor, the sick, the hungry, the naked (Isa. 58:6,7, Matt. 25:35,36), your neighbors, your brethren, and all mankind, and help them. (Matt. 19:21)

By so doing before you are aware you will be surprised to find yourself regenerated already into the image of God and Jesus. You will also find your soul enjoying heaven's boundless peace and joy embraced by the everlasting arms of God. You will be surprised

to find that regeneration is so joyful and so easily attained to, and will burst into praise to God.

**\* The Miraculous Formula for Regeneration**

2 Peter 3:8 + John 17:3 + Matt. 19:21 = 2 Cor. 5:17  
Acts 20:24

(Believe) (Meditate) (Practice) (Regeneration)

A Word of Request

In Korea it is said, "Much salt in the kitchen avails nothing unless used." "Bushels of pearls is of no value to me unless threaded together." Thus far, you have read through this book and learned the formula for regeneration at the end. Yet regeneration is to begin from now on. No one who practices and exercises the formula will be unable to go to heaven. But the brethren and sisters who put away this book after reading it through only once will stand on the most dangerous ground before God on the final day. I Myung Ho earnestly and with my whole heart entreat you readers to read through this book many times and make it the theme of your continual meditation. And by practicing "the miraculous formula for regeneration," may you all be regenerated, and we all meet together around the throne of the Triune God in heaven! Praise the Lord!



## 7. The Happiness of Those Who Walk in the Path of Sanctification

Those who have been regenerated completely by the Holy Spirit and are walking in the path of sanctification do not cherish worldly-minded, sinful heart any longer, but, filled with God's infinite love, walk in heaven's mysterious rapture discovering more and more of Christ's indescribable love and grace and God's excellency of character. As they discover the true beauties, they become disgusted with sinful life, for such things begin to appear abominable before their eyes. They become hateful of sin and their hearts become united with God and accept Christ as their personal Friend walking with Him in joy always. Old lifestyle is replaced by new heart, new thought, new affection, new interest, and new resolution; sorrow and ambition and passion are renewed and sanctified. The lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life that they loved more than God vanish away; God and Jesus become their closest Friends who walk with them, and they always love and praise their Lord and Saviour.

The Holy Words that could not be understood thus far begin to open and be easily understood, and all mysteries are unfolded in joy. The knowledge of the only true God and of Jesus Christ whom He has sent begins to spread limitlessly and vastly and boundlessly. The knowledge and happiness that comes from the vast and deep and great love of God become the power

of joy that can save themselves and the whole world. The religious life that was like "the wilderness and the dry land" so far now becomes a life of joy, the desertlike heart begins to "rejoice and blossom; like the lily, it blossoms abundantly, rejoices with joy and singing. The glory of Lebanon is given to it, the majesty of Carmel and Sharon." The eyes of heart are now open, and begin to "see the glory of the Lord, the majesty of our God."

Such people, led by the Holy Spirit, become the messenger of God who seek and strive to save their neighbors and all mankind, who "strengthen the weak hands, and make firm the feeble knees." And with comfort and encouragement and urging they say to those who are of a fearful heart, "Be strong, fear not! Behold, your God will come with vengeance, with the recompense of God. He will come and save you." "The eyes of the "spiritual "blind shall be opened and the ears of the "spiritual "deaf unstopped; then shall the "spiritually "lame man leap like a hart, and the tongue of the "spiritual "dumb sing for joy and burst with praise: "For living water of the Holy Spirit "shall break forth in the wilderness" of the hearts of all mankind, "and streams in the desert" of souls: "the burning sand" of the soul "shall become a pool, and the thirsty ground" of the soul "springs of water." "And a highway shall be there to prepare the way of our Lord Jesus, and it shall be called The Holy way." It shall not be in the hearts of the unclean, but only in the hearts of the regenerate and the redeemed through the

blood of Jesus and the power of the Holy Spirit. "And the ransomed of the Lord shall return" from all the faces of the earth, "and come to Zion with singing: everlasting joy shall be upon their heads: they shall obtain joy and gladness, and sorrow and sighing shall flee away" (Isa. 35:1-10). Therefore the life of the regenerate on earth is the everlasting life of happiness that will continue to last forever in heaven.

You the regenerate in the Lord, "violence shall no more be heard in thy land, wasting nor destruction within thy borders; but thou shalt call thy walls Salvation, and thy gates Praise. The sun shall be no more thy light by day; neither for brightness shall the moon give light unto thee: but the Lord shall be unto thee an everlasting light, and thy God thy glory. Thy sun shall no more go down; neither shall thy moon withdraw itself: for the Lord shall be thine everlasting light, and the days of thy mourning shall be ended. Thy people also shall be all righteous: they shall inherit the land for ever, the branch of My planting, the work of My hands, that I may be glorified. A little one shall become a thousand, and a small one a strong nation: I the Lord will hasten it in His time" (Isa. 60:18-22, K.J.V.).

"Ye shall be named the Priest of the Lord: man shall call you the Ministers of our God: ye shall eat the riches of the Gentiles, and in their glory shall ye boast yourselves. For your shame ye shall have double: and for confusion they shall rejoice in their portion: therefore in their land they shall possess the double: everlasting joy shall be unto them" (Isa. 61:6,7, K.J.V.).

"And the Gentiles shall see thy righteousness, and all kings thy glory; and thou shalt be called by a new name, which the mouth of the Lord shall name. Thou shalt also be a crown of glory in the hand of the Lord, and a royal diadem in the hand of thy God. Thou shalt no more be termed Forsaken; neither shall thy land any more be termed Desolate; but thou shalt be called Hepzibah, and thy land Beulah: for the Lord delighteth in thee, and thy land shall be married. For as a young man marieth a virgin... and as a bridegroom rejoiceth over the bride, so shall thy God rejoice over thee" (Isa. 62:2-5, K.J.V.).

"Happy are you, O Israel! Who is like you, a people saved by the Lord!" (Deut. 33:29).

"He will rejoice over you with gladness. He will renew you in His love; He will exult over you with loud singing" (Zeph. 3:17). Hallelujah!

**\* Thanksgiving \***

My real Father in heaven! I do not know what to say to You for Your wonderful love for me. You cleansed and purified me through the precious blood of Jesus my Eldest Brother, and sanctified my inner man completely through the Holy Spirit, and embraced me with Your everlasting arms and then carried me before Your throne. Standing before Your throne, I can merely praise and thank Thee forever for my Father's infinite love and my Eldest Brother's devoted love and the Holy Spirit's tender love. Thank You Father. Praise the Lord!

In the name of my Eldest Brother Jesus I pray. Amen.

# O! Round Love of God

Myung Ho Park  
Music by Jong Sun Ki

## -Closing Word-

I am sincerely grateful to Sis. Choon Hee. Kim for her consecrated heart and effort in writing out the original manuscript of this book (in Korean), and Bro. Youn Woo Park and his esteemed wife for their wholehearted support and help for the first publication of this book (in Korean), and especially to Bro. Hye Woo Nam and Sis. Eun Hyoung Lee for their devotion to translating this book into English, and Sis. Young Ja Choi for her devoted help for completing the manuscript of this English translation, and Elder Su Rok Choo and his esteemed wife for their material and moral support for the publication of this English Edition and all fellow believers who have contributed moral and material support for this work.

I do earnestly pray that God's special grace of regeneration and His boundless blessings be with them in this world and in the world to come. I am also grateful to all the readers and pray that God's great love will be ever with you.

Myung Ho, a debtor of love

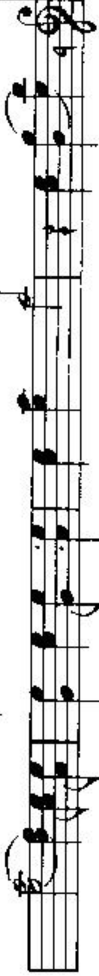
1 O Love our Fa-ther's love round and ho-ly love How can it  
 2 O Love our Fa-ther's love round and ever so big How can it  
 3 O Love our Fa-ther's love round and ever so wide How can it  
 4 O Love our Fa-ther's love round and won-der-ful How can it  
 5 O Love our Fa-ther's love round and ever-las-ting Do you breath-ri  
 6 O Love our Fa-ther's love round and for-er-ter- Do you breath-ri  
 7 O Love our Fa-ther's love round and e-ter-nal How can it

world know it or an-gels un-der-stand? O Our fa-ther's love is  
 sun or moon know so great love of God? O Our fa-ther's love is  
 fir-ma-ment or the stars un-der-stand? O Our fa-ther's love is  
 hear-ven know or the earth un-der-stand? O Our fa-ther's love is  
 know His love or sis-ter know His love? O Our fa-ther's love is  
 know His love or sis-ter know His love? Now I wipe away tears run-ning  
 world know it or the stars un-der-stand? Now I go up to see my

so ex-treme Nei-ther the earth nor man nor an-gels know this won-der-ful fa-ther  
 so great On-ly the son can ma-ni-fest this love O ho-ly Spir-it  
 so end-less It's even greater than a-go-ny of Son and it is ev-ry-where  
 won-der-ful It is thick er than blood of the Son's cross and it is strong  
 im-measur-a-ble It is high-er than the sky and hea-ven and it is bro-therly  
 down my face and will run to-ward the dark world to save my poor breath-ri  
 fa-ther and bury my face in His wide bos-om pour-ing my tea



love ex-cept His only Son O so ex-treme and deep  
 come and teach me His love O so great and lofty is His  
 worse than pain's of the Son I can not help sobbing with  
 than the death of the cross I can not help walling with  
 than the big and vast universe which can not possibly be  
 sis-terns de-ceived by ene-my now I march to proclaim His  
 thank him for His so kind love so won-der-ful love of our



is His love I can not re-pay His love even by gi-ving  
 lo-ve We can not un-der-stand with all the knowl-edge  
 str-ent cry I can not re-pay His love even by gi-ving  
 a loud cry That an-gel co-vers his face and weeps with deep  
 mea-sured No mat-ter how high I climb I can't still reach  
 lo-ve (I) spread His won-der-ful love by sacri-fic-ing  
 fa-ther's lov-ing and mercif-ful ta-ther wipes a-way my



my life Our fa-ther's lov-ve is so good and ex-treme  
 of world Our fa-ther's lov-ve is sweet and great to me  
 my life Our fa-ther's lov-ve is so good 'N' bound-less  
 sor-row Our fa-ther's lov-ve is so good 'N' wonder-ful  
 its height Our fa-ther's lov-ve is good and lofty to me  
 my life Our fa-ther's lov-ve is so good and eter-nal  
 tears em-brac-ing me in His bosom and gives me com-fort



# THIS IS ETERNAL LIFE

9. 25. 1986. Printing  
 10. 1. 1986. The 6th Printing Publication

Writer Myung Ho Park  
 Publisher Myung Suk Jang

Printing Office: DAE SUNG PRINTING CO.

Publication Office:

Elijah Gospel Missionary Institute (Wonju) 0371-44-7957  
 (Seoul) 586-0990, 586-2621  
 Kang-Won Do Won-Sung Gun So-Cho Myun Dun-Dun 2-Ri Mt. 171-1